1927
942

THE HISTORY AND ADVENTURES OF THE RENOWNED DON QUIXOTE.

TRANSLATED FROM THE SPANISH OF

MIGUEL DE CERVANTES SAAVEDRA.

TO WHICH IS PREFIXED,

SOME ACCOUNT OF THE AUTHOR's LIFE.

BY

DR. SMOLLETT.

IN FIVE VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

Cooke's Edition.

EMBELLISHED WITH SUPERB ENGRAVINGS.

London:
Printed for C. COOKE, No. 17, Paternoster-Row;
And sold by all the Booksellers in
Great Britain and
Ireland.

942

THE

ATCHIEVEMENTS

OF THE SAGE AND VALIANT

DON QUIXOTE.

PART I. BOOK III.

CHAPTER IX.

Of what befel the renowned Don Quixote in the Brown Mountain; being one of the moſt ſurprizing Adventures which is recounted in this true Hiſtory.

DON Quixote, finding himſelf ſo evil entreated, ſaid to his ſquire, 'I have always heard it obſerved, Sancho, that benefits conferred on baſe-minded people are like drops of water thrown into the ſea. Had I taken thy advice, I might have avoided this vexation: but, now the affair is over, we muſt have recourſe to patience, and take warning for the future.'—'Yes,' replied Sancho, 'your worſhip will take warning as ſure as I am a Turk; but ſince you allow, that if you had taken my advice, you would have avoided this misfortune, take my advice now, and you will avoid a greater ſtill! for I give you notice, that all your errantry will ſtand you in little ſtead againſt the holy brotherhood, who don't value all the knights errant in the univerſe three farthings: and, in faith, this minute methinks I hear their arrows buzzing about my ears.'—'Thou art naturally a coward, Sancho,' ſaid the knight; 'but that thou mayeſt have no reaſon to ſay I am obſtinate, and never follow thy counſel, for once thou ſhalt prevail; I will retreat from the danger thou dreadeſt ſo much; but it ſhall be on condition, that thou ſhalt never, either in life or death, hint to any perſon whatſoever, that I retired and avoided this peril

through fear, but merely in compliance with thy earnest request; for to say otherwise would be to propagate falsehood; and from this hour to that, and from that hour to this, I give thee the lye, and affirm thou lyest, and wilt lye, as often as thou shalt say or think any such thing: make no reply, therefore; the very thought of my being supposed to abscond or retreat from danger, especially from this, as it implies some sort of shadow of fear, inspires me with such courage, that here am I alone ready to remain, and expect not only the holy brotherhood, which thou hast mentioned with fear and trembling, but also the brothers of the twelve tribes of Israel, those of the seven Maccabees, with Castor and Pollux, and all the brethren and brotherhoods in the universe.'—'Sir,' replied Sancho, 'to retreat is not to fly; nor is it prudent to tarry when the danger overbalances the hope; and it is always the practice of wise people to reserve something for to-morrow, without venturing all upon one cast; and you must know, that though I be a rustick and a clown, I have all my lifetime had a small share of what is called good conduct; wherefore you need not repent of having taken my advice, but mount Rozinante, if you can; if not, I will lend you my assistance, and follow me; for this noddle of mine tells me, that, at present, we have more need of heels than of hands.'

Don Quixote accordingly mounted, without the least reply; and Sancho leading the way upon his ass, they took refuge in that part of the brown mountain which was nearest, the squire intending to go quite across to Viso or Almodavar del Campo, after they should have lurked for some days among the rocks, that they might not be found, in case the holy brotherhood should come in search of them: he was encouraged to this resolution, by seeing, that in the scuffle with the galley slaves, the provisions his ass carried had escaped untouched*; a circumstance

* This is an oversight of the author, who seems to have forgot that Sancho lost his wallet at the inn, and was robbed by

circumstance that, in his opinion, amounted to a miracle, considering what the thieves had taken, and how narrowly they had searched.

That evening they arrived in the very heart of the Sierra Morena *, where Sancho proposed to spend the night, and even to pass a few days, at least to stay as long as their store should last; accordingly they took up their lodging between two rocks in the midst of a great number of cork trees; but fate, which, according to the opinion of those who do not enjoy the light of the true faith, guides, conducts, and disposes all things after its own way, ordained that Gines de Passamonte, that famous robber and cheat, who had been delivered from the chain by the valour and madness of Don Quixote; I say fate ordained that he, impelled by the fear of the holy brotherhood, which he did not dread without good reason, happened likewise to take refuge in those mountains; and even to be carried by this fear to the same place whither the same principle had directed Don Quixote and Sancho Panza, just time enough to know who they were, notwithstanding their being gone to sleep. As the wicked are always ungrateful, and necessity puts them to their shifts, and the present convenience overcomes the prospect of future quiet; Gines, who was neither grateful or good-natured, resolved to steal Sancho's ass, undervaluing Rozinante as a subject that he could neither pawn or sell: accordingly, while the squire was asleep, he stole Dapple; and, before morning, was gone far enough to elude all pursuit.

The appearance of Aurora, that rejoices the earth, had a quite contrary effect upon Sancho Panza; who, missing his Dapple, and searching for him in vain, began to utter the most woeful lamentation that ever was

by the galley slaves of the great coat, or cloak, in which he carried the remains of that provision he had taken from those who attended the dead body towards Segovia.

* A chain of dusky mountains that divide Castile from Andalusia.

heard; and Don Quixote, waked by the noiſe, heard him exclaiming in this manner: ‘ O ſon of my bowels! born in my houſe, the play-fellow of my children, the delight of my ſpouſe, the envy of my neighbours, and comfort of my cares! in ſhort, the half of my ſuſtenance: for with ſix and twenty maravedis, which thou haſt daily earned, did I defray one half of my family expence!’ Don Quixote hearing this complaint, and being informed of the cauſe, conſoled Sancho with all the arguments in his power; and, begging him to have patience, promiſed to give him a bill of exchange, on ſight of which he ſhould receive three aſſes out of five which the knight had left at home. Sancho being comforted with this declaration, dried up his tears, moderated his ſighs, and returned a thouſand thanks to Don Quixote for his generoſity. As they ſauntered among the rocks, the knight's heart was rejoiced to ſee places ſo well adapted to thoſe adventures he was in queſt of; for they called to his remembrance thoſe wonderful events which had happened to knights-errant among ſuch rocks and ſolitudes: he went on, muſing on theſe ſubjects, and indeed ſo wrapped up and engroſſed by them, that he minded nothing elſe; while Sancho's only care, now that he thought he travelled in ſafety, was to ſatisfy his appetite with what remained of the ſpoils of the clergy; he therefore jogged on leiſurely after his maſter; ſitting ſide-ways on his aſs *, and repleniſhing his own bags out of that which contained the proviſion; and while he was thus employed, would not have given a farthing for the beſt adventure that could happen.

Chancing, however, to lift up his eyes, he perceived his maſter had ſtopped, and was endeavouring, with the point of his lance, to raiſe ſome bundle that lay upon the ground; he therefore haſtened up to him, in order

to

* Here Cervantes hath been caught napping by the criticks; who obſerve, that Sancho could not be mounted on the aſs, which was but juſt now ſtolen by Gines de Paſſamonte.

to lend his aſſiſtance, ſhould it be found neceſſary; and arrived juſt as the knight had turned up with his lance, a pillion with a portmanteau fixed to it, all rotted and conſumed by the weather; but ſo heavy, that Sancho was obliged to alight, in order to take them up. His maſter having ordered him to examine the contents of the portmanteau, he obeyed with great alacrity; and though it was ſhut with a chain and padlock, there were ſo many holes in it, that he ſoon reached the inſide, where he found four ſhirts of fine Holland, with other proviſion of linen, equally faſhionable and clean, together with a pretty large heap of crowns of gold, wrapped up in a rag; which he no ſooner perceived, than he cried in a rapture, 'Bleſſed be Heaven for granting us one advantageous adventure!' then continuing his ſearch, he found a pocket-book richly garniſhed, which Don Quixote deſired to have, bidding him keep the money for his own uſe. Sancho kiſſed his hand for the favour, and taking the linen out of the portmanteau, crammed it into the bag that held their proviſion.

The knight having conſidered the whole affair, 'Sancho,' ſaid he, 'I am of opinion, and cannot poſſibly be miſtaken, that ſome bewildered traveller, in his paſſage over theſe mountains, has been ſet upon by robbers, who, having ſlain him, muſt have dragged his body to be buried in this unfrequented place.'—'That cannot be the caſe,' anſwered the ſquire; 'for if they had been robbers, they would not have left the money behind them.'—'Thou art in the right,' ſaid Don Quixote; 'and I cannot gueſs nor conceive what the matter can have been. Let us ſee if there be any thing written in this pocket-book, by which we may trace out and come to the certainty of what we want to know.' He opened it accordingly, and the firſt thing he found was the rough draught, though very legible, of a ſonnet, which he read aloud for the benefit of Sancho, in theſe words.

I.

LOVE either cruel is or blind;
Or ſtill unequal to the cauſe,
Is this diſtemper of the mind,
That with infernal torture gnaws.

II.

But Love's a god, and cruelty
In heavenly breaſts can never dwell:
Then ſay by what authority
I'm doom'd to feel the pains of hell?

III.

Of all my ſufferings and my woe,
Is Chloe then the fatal ſource?
Sure ill from good can never flow,
Nor ſo much beauty gild a curſe.

IV.

With hopeleſs miſery weigh'd down,
I'll ſeek for quiet in the grave;
For when the malady's unknown,
A miracle alone can ſave.

'From ſuch rhyme,' ſaid Sancho, 'there is no information to be got, unleſs by that Clue we could come to the bottom of the affair*.'—'What clue doſt thou mean?' ſaid the knight. 'The Clue your worſhip mentioned juſt now in the Sonnet,' anſwered the ſquire. 'I mentioned no clue,' replied Don Quixote; 'but Chloe, which is without doubt the name of the lady of whom the author of theſe verſes complains; and really he muſt have been a very ingenious poet, or elſe I know very little of the art.'—'Then your worſhip underſtands crambo?' ſaid the ſquire. 'Better than you imagine,' anſwered the knight, 'as you will ſee when you carry from me a letter to my miſtreſs Dulcinea

* As it is impoſſible to preſerve the original blunders of Sancho, who miſtakes Filo, or Phillis, for Hilo, that ſignifies a thread, we are obliged to ſubſtitute another, by changing Phillis into Chloe, which Sancho, in Engliſh, might have as naturally miſtaken for a clue; and by this expedient the ſenſe of the paſſage is not hurt, and but very little altered.

nea del Toboso, written in verse from top to bottom; for thou must know, Sancho, that all, or the greatest part, of the knights-errant who lived in former ages, were very much addicted to poetry and musick; these two qualities, or rather gifts of nature, being annexed to all errants in love; though the truth is, their couplets were rather sprightly than elegant.'—' I wish your worship would read on,' said Sancho; ' perhaps you may find something more to our satisfaction.' Accordingly the knight having turned over the leaf, ' Here is prose,' said he; ' and seems to be a letter.' Sancho asking if it was upon business, his master replied, ' In the beginning there was nothing but love.'—' Pray, Sir,' cried Sancho, ' read it aloud, for I am highly delighted with matters of love.' ' With all my heart,' answered Don Quixote; who raising his voice, in compliance with the squire's request, read what follows.

' Thy false promises, together with the certainty of my misfortune, have exiled me to a corner of the world, from whence thou wilt hear an account of my death, before this my complaint shall reach thine ears. Thou hast cast me off, ungrateful as thou art, in favour of one who, though he is richer, is not a more deserving lover than me: for if virtue were the wealth that is most esteemed, I should have no cause to envy the happiness of others, or to bewail my own mishap. What thy beauty had raised, thy behaviour has overthrown: by the first I mistook thee for an angel, by the last I discovered thee to be a woman. Mayest thou live in peace, fair authoress of my misfortunes; and Heaven grant that the deceit of thy husband may never be disclosed, that thou mayest never repent of what thou hast done, nor I enjoy the revenge I do not desire!'

Don Quixote having read this letter, observed, that nothing else could be inferred either from it, or the verses, but that the author was some despairing lover. Then perusing the rest of the book, he found more verses and letters, some legible, and others not intelligible; but the substance of them all was composed of

 complaints,

complaints, lamentations, ſuſpicions, deſires, diſguſts, favours, and diſdain, ſome of which were extolled, and others deplored. While Don Quixote examined the book, Sancho rummaged the portmanteau, without leaving a corner in that or the pillion which he did not ſearch, pry into, and overhaul; no ſeam was left unripped, no lock of wool unpicked, that nothing might be left through negligence and want of care; ſo much was his cupidity awakened by finding the money, which amounted to more than a hundred crowns; and though he reaped no other fruit from his induſtry, he thought himſelf abundantly requited for his capers in the blanket, his vomit of the balſam, the benediction of the pack-ſtaves, the fiſty-cuffs of the carrier, the loſs of his bags, the robbery of his great coat, with all the hunger, thirſt, and fatigue he had undergone in the ſervice of his worthy maſter, who had made him more than amends by his generous preſent of this windfall.

The knight of the rueful countenance was impatient to know the owner of the portmanteau; conjecturing by the ſonnet, the letter, the gold, and the fine linen, that he muſt be ſome lover of quality, whom the diſdain and barbarity of his miſtreſs had driven to ſome deſperate end: but as, in that uninhabited and rocky place, there was nobody who could give him the information he wanted, he reſolved to penetrate farther into the mountain, without taking any other road than what Rozinante ſhould chuſe for his own conveniency, ſtill confident of meeting with ſome ſtrange adventure among theſe briars and brambles.

As he went on, entertaining himſelf with theſe reflections, he perceived upon the top of a hill right before him, a man ſkipping from buſh to buſh, and rock to rock, with wonderful agility; his body ſeemed naked, his beard black and buſhy, his hair long and matted, his feet unſhod, his legs bare, and his thighs covered with breeches, which to all appearance were of crimſon,

but

but so ragged, that his skin appeared through many different holes, while his head was without any sort of covering. Notwithstanding the nimbleness with which he passed, all these minute circumstances were seen and remarked by the knight of the rueful countenance, who in vain attempted to follow him; those rough roads being quite unpassable by the feeble Rozinante, who was naturally phlegmatick and tender-footed. However, Don Quixote concluded that this must be the owner of the pillion and portmanteau, and determined within himself to find him out, although he should travel a whole year through the mountains for that very purpose. With this view he ordered Sancho to alight, and take a short cut over one part of the mountain, while he should go round the other: and by this expedient they might come up with the man who had so suddenly vanished from their sight. 'That proposal I can by no means comply with,' replied the squire; 'for if I stir but an inch from your worship, fear instantly lays hold on me, and assaults me in a thousand horrid shapes and visions; and let this serve to apprize you, that henceforward, I will not budge a finger's breadth from your presence.'—'Be it so,' said he of the rueful countenance: 'and I am very glad that thou canst avail thyself of my courage, which shall never fail thee, even if thy soul should fail thy body: follow me, therefore, step by step, or at thy own leisure, and use thine eyes like two spy-glasses; we will take a compass round this little mountain, and perhaps we may meet again with that man, who is certainly no other than the ower of what we found.' To this observation Sancho replied, 'Methinks we may save ourselves that trouble; for if, upon finding him, he should prove to be the owner of the money, I must of course make restitution; therefore we had better spare all this fruitless search; and keep it *bona fide*, until the true owner appear of himself, without all this intricate enquiry: and before that happens, perhaps I shall have spent the whole, and then I shall be discharged by law.'—'In that notion thou art mistaken,

Sancho,' resumed the knight; 'for as we have already good grounds to believe he is the owner, it is our duty to find him out, and restore what we have taken; and though we should not find him, the strong reason we have to believe that it belongs to him will make us equally guilty in detaining it, as we should be if it really did. Wherefore, friend Sancho, do not give thyself any uneasiness about the enquiry; because if we find him, I shall be freed from a great deal of anxiety.' So saying, he put spurs to Rozinante, and Sancho followed him in his usual manner. Having surrounded part of the mountain, they found in a brook, that watered the foot of it, a dead mule saddled and [illegible]dled, and half consumed by the dogs and crows; another circumstance which confirmed them in the opinion, th[illegible] who fled from them was master both of the mule and [illegible].

While they were looking at this [illegible]d a shepherd's whistle, and presently on th[illegible]ared a good number of goats, and behind them, [illegible]p of the mountain, they descried the goatherd, who seemed to be a man in years. Don Quixote calling aloud, entreated him to come down; and he, in the same tone, asked what had brought them to that place, which was seldom trodden, except by the feet of goats, wolves, and other wild beasts that harboured thereabouts? Sancho bade him come down, and they would tell him what had brought them thither; upon which the goatherd descended, and coming up to Don Quixote, 'I will wager,' said he, 'that you are looking at the hireling mule, which lies dead in that bottom, where in good sooth it hath lain full six months. Pray, have you met with it's master?'—'We have met with nothing,' answered the knight, 'but a pillion and portmanteau, which we found not far from hence.'—'I have often seen the same things,' replied the goatherd, 'but would never touch nor go near them, being afraid of some misfortune, or of being questioned for theft; for the devil is very cunning, and raises blocks under our feet, over which we stumble, and very often fall, without knowing how or wherefore.'

—'That

DON QUIXOTE.

Cardenio difcovered by the Goatherds.

Engraved for C. Cooke, Nov.r 26 1796.

Vide Vol. II page 13.14.

—'That is the very thing I say,' answered Sancho: 'tho' I saw them also, I would not go within a stone's throw of them; there I left them, and there they remain as they were; for I don't chuse to steal a dog with a collar about his neck.'* 'Pr'ythee, honest friend,' said Don Quixote, 'dost thou know who the owner of these things is?' 'All that I can say of the matter,' answered the goatherd, 'is, that it may be about six months, more or less, since there came to our hut, which is about three leagues from hence, a very genteel young man, of a comely appearance, riding upon that very mule that now lies dead, with the same pillion and portmanteau which you say you found. He asked what part of the mountain was the most woody and concealed; and we told him, that it was this very spot where we now are, and it is so; for if you go half a league farther into the mountain, you will perhaps find it a very difficult matter to return: and I marvel much how you have got so far, for there is neither high road or by-path that leads to this place. But as I was saying, the young man hearing our reply, turned his mule, and rode towards the place to which we had directed him, leaving us all very much pleased with his appearance, though not a little surprized at his question, and the speed with which we saw him ride back into the heart of the mountain: from that time we saw no more of him, till a few days after; when he sprung upon one of our shepherds on the road; and, without saying why or wherefore, beat and bruised him unmercifully; after which he went to the sumpter ass, and carrying off all the bread and cheese that was on his back, with surprizing nimbleness, ran back again to the thicket. As soon as we understood this particular, several of us goatherds went in search of him, through the most wild and unfrequented part of the mountain, for the space of two days, at the end of which we found him

* Methinks it is inconsistent with the character of the knight, to allow Sancho to tell such a fraudulent untruth in his hearing; nor is Panza's behaviour on this occasion much for the honour of his simplicity.

him lying in the hollow of a large cork-tree. He came out to us in a very civil manner, with his cloaths all torn, and his face ſo tanned and disfigured by the ſun, that we ſhould ſcarce have known him, had not his cloaths, tattered as they were, which we had before taken particular notice of, aſſured us that he was the perſon we went in ſearch of. He ſaluted us very courteouſly, and in a few words, though very well choſen, bad us not wonder at ſeeing him in that condition; for he was obliged in that manner to do penance, which had been enjoined him on account of his manifold ſins and tranſgreſſions. We earneſtly begged to know who he was; but that he would never be prevailed upon to tell: we deſired him alſo, whenever he ſhould have occaſion for food, without which he could not live, to tell us where we ſhould find him, and we would bring it to him with great care and affection; or if that was not to his liking, we deſired him to aſk it civilly, without taking it by force. He thanked us kindly for our tenders of ſervice, begged pardon for the aſſaults he had committed, and promiſed for the future, to aſk it for God's ſake, without giving offence to any perſon whatſoever. With regard to the place of his habitation, he ſaid he had no other than that which chance preſented every night when it grew dark; and concluded his diſcourſe with ſuch piteous lamentation, that our hearts muſt have been made of flint, if we could have heard it without ſhedding tears, conſidering the woeful change he had undergone ſince we ſaw him at firſt; for as I have already obſerved, he was a genteel, comely youth; and, by his courteous and polite diſcourſe, ſhewed himſelf to be a perſon of good birth and excellent breeding; and tho' we who heard him were only home-bred country people, the gentility of his carriage was eaſily perceived by our clowniſh ignorance. In the midſt of this converſation that paſſed between him and us, he grew ſilent all of a ſudden, and nailed, as it were, his eyes to the ground, for a conſiderable ſpace of time, during which we remained in ſuſpence and no ſmall concern, to ſee the effect

effect of this stupefaction; for by his staring at the ground for a good while, without moving his eye-lids, then shutting them close and biting his lips, and then drawing up the skin of his forehead, we could easily perceive that he was seized with some fit of madness; and he soon confirmed the truth of our opinion, for he sprung up with surprizing force from the ground on which he had thrown himself, and attacked the person who was next to him with such rage and resolution, that if we had not taken him off, he would have beaten and bit him to death; crying aloud all the time, "Ha, treacherous Fernando! now shalt thou pay for the injury thou hast done me. These hands shall tear out thy heart, in which all kinds of wickedness, particularly fraud and deceit, are harboured and dwell!" To these he added other expressions, tending to reproach that Fernando with treachery and baseness. When we had got our friend out of his clutches, with no small trouble, he went off without speaking another word, and ran at full speed among these shrubs and brambles, so as that it was impossible for us to follow him. From these things we conjectured that his madness came upon him by fits, and that some person of the name of Fernando must have done him some deadly wrong, which hath driven him to distraction. Indeed, this conjecture has been since confirmed by his different behaviour on divers occasions, when he hath met with our shepherds, from whom he hath sometimes begged part of their provision, and at other times he hath taken it by force; for when the fit of lunacy is upon him, though they offer it of their own free will, he will not accept of it peaceably, without coming to blows; but when he is in his right senses, he begs it for God's sake, in a very courteous and civil manner, and returns many thanks for the favour, accompanied with abundance of tears. And truly, gentlemen,' added the goatherd, 'I and four more country lads, two of them my own servants, and the other two friends of mine, yesterday resolved to go in search

fearch of him, and, after having found him, to carry him, either by force or fair means, to the city of Almodavar, which is about eight leagues from hence, and there have him cured, if he be curable; or learn of him, when he is in his fenfes, who he is, or whether or not he has any relations to whom we may give an account of his misfortune. This, gentlemen, is all I can fay in anfwer to the queftions you afked; and you may take it for granted, that the owner of the goods you found, is the very fame perfon whom you faw fkip about half-naked with fuch agility:' for Don Quixote had faid that they had feen a man in that condition, leaping from rock to rock.

The knight was very much furprized at this information of the goatherd, which making him ftill more impatient to know who this unfortunate lunatick was, he determined with himfelf to put his former defign in execution, and go in queft of him through the whole mountain, without leaving a cave or corner unfearched until he fhould find him. But accident was more his friend on this occafion, than he could either imagine or expect; for at that inftant, the young man of himfelf appeared in the cleft of a rock hard by the place where they ftood; and came towards them, muttering fomething to himfelf, which they could not have underftood had he been near, much lefs as he was at fome diftance from them. His equipage was juft as it had been defcribed; but, as he approached, Don Quixote perceived that his buff doublet, though torn to rags, ftill retained the perfume: from whence he concluded, that the perfon who wore fuch drefs could not be a man of the loweft rank. When he came up, he faluted them very politely, though with a hoarfe, miftuned voice; and the falutation was returned with no lefs courtefy by Don Quixote, who alighting from Rozinante, with genteel and graceful deportment, went, and embraced the ftranger, whom he ftrained within his arms a good while, as if he had been a very old acquaintance. The other, who might have been called the tatterdemalion of the

the diſtracted, as Don Quixote was ſtiled the knight of the rueful countenance, after having ſubmitted to this embrace, ſtepped back, and laying his hands on the ſhoulders of the knight, ſtood looking attentively in his face, in order to recollect him; no leſs aſtoniſhed, perhaps, at the figure, mien, and armour of Don Quixote, than this laſt was ſurprized at his forlorn appearance. At length, the firſt who broke ſilence after the embrace was the ragged youth, who ſpoke what you may read in the following chapter.

CHAPTER X.

The Continuation of the Adventure in the Sierra Morena.

THE hiſtory relates, that Don Quixote liſtened with vaſt attention to the ſhabby knight of the mountain, who began the converſation thus: 'Aſſuredly, Signior, though I have not the honour to know who you are, I thank you heartily for thoſe expreſſions of kindneſs with which you treat me; and wiſh I were in ſuch a ſituation as would enable me to repay this courteous reception with ſomething more than mere good-will: but my hapleſs fortune affords me nothing to offer in return for the civilities that are ſhewn me, except a hearty inclination to make a more adequate ſatisfaction.'—'My will and deſire,' anſwered Don Quixote, 'to ſerve you is ſo ſtrong, that I was determined not to quit theſe mountains until I had found you, and learned of yourſelf whether or not the grief you manifeſt in this ſtrange courſe of life, could be alleviated by any kind of remedy, for which, had need required, I would have ſearched with all poſſible diligence; and had your misfortune been ſuch as ſhut up all the avenues to advice and redreſs, I was reſolved to join your lamentations, and bemoan your miſery to the utmoſt of my power: for, in all misfortunes, the greateſt conſolation is a ſympathizing friend; and if this my friendly intention deſerves the leaſt return of civility, I entreat you, Signior, by that courteſy which I ſee you ſo eminently poſſeſs, and moreover conjure you by that object which

of all others in this life you have moft loved, or are moft in love with, to tell me who you are, and inform me of the caufe that brings you to live and die in this folitude, like the brute beafts among which you dwell, fo different from that rank and fituation to which your appearance and perfon declare you are entitled. And I fwear by the order of chivalry which I have received, unworthy finner that I am! and by the profeffion of a knight-errant, that if you comply with this my requeft, I will ferve you with that earneftnefs which my duty obliges me to exprefs, either in remedying your mifhap, if it admits of remedy, or in condoling with you, as I have already promifed.' The knight of the wood, hearing him of the rueful countenance talk in this manner, could do nothing for fome time but gaze, and ftare, and furvey him from head to foot; at length, having examined him thoroughly, he faid, 'If you have got any food, for God's fake fpare me a little; and after I fhall have eaten it, I will do as you defire, in return for the civility you now fhew me.'

Sancho immediately pulled from his bag, and the goatherd from his fcrip, fome victuals to appeafe the hunger of the tatterdemalion, who fwallowed what they gave him like a frantick perfon, with fuch hurry, that he left not the interval of an inftant between one mouthful and another, but feemed to devour rather than eat, without either fpeaking or being fpoken to by the fpectators. His repaft being ended, he beckoned them to follow, and conducted them to a verdant fpot of grafs, at the turning of a rock, a little way from the place where they were; and fitting down on the green turf, they followed his example; not a word being fpoke all the time, until the ragged knight, after having adjufted himfelf in his feat, began in this manner. 'If you defire, gentlemen, that I fhould, in a few words, inform you of the immenfity of my misfortunes, you muft give me your promife that you will not by any queftion, or otherwife, interrupt the thread of my doleful ftory; for

if

if you ſhould, that inſtant I will break off the narration.' This warning recalled to the knight's memory the ſtory recounted by his ſquire, which ſtill remained unfiniſhed, becauſe he had not kept an exact account of the goats, as they paſſed the river. But, to return to the tattered knight: 'I give you this precaution,' added he, 'becauſe I would briefly paſs over the detail of my misfortunes, the remembrance of which brings freſh addition to my woe; and the fewer queſtions you aſk, the ſooner ſhall I have finiſhed the relation; although, in order to ſatisfy your curioſity to the full, I will not fail to mention every material circumſtance.' Don Quixote promiſed, in behalf of himſelf and the company, to avoid all manner of interruption; and the ſtranger, thus aſſured, began in theſe words:

'My name is Cardenio; the place of my nativity one of the beſt cities in this province of Andaluſia; my family noble, my parents rich, and my misfortunes ſo great, that no doubt they have been lamented by them, and even felt through my whole kindred, though all their wealth would not alleviate my woe; for the goods of fortune are but of little ſervice againſt thoſe ills inflicted by the hand of Heaven. In the ſame country lived, ſhall I call her a paradiſe, which love had adorned with all the charms I could deſire to poſſeſs? ſuch was the beauty of Lucinda, a young lady as well-born and rich as I, though more fortunate, and endowed with leſs conſtancy than what was due to my honourable intentions. This Lucinda did I admire, love and adore, even from my moſt tender years; and ſhe made me all the returns of love and inclination that I could expect from her infant age. Our parents were not ignorant of our mutual affection, which gave them no offence, becauſe they foreſaw that if it ſhould increaſe with our years, it could have no other iſſue than marriage; an union which the equality of our age and fortune ſeemed to point out. Meanwhile, our paſſion growing up with our age, Lucinda's father thought himſelf obliged to forbid me his houſe, imitating, in that particular, the

parents of Thiſbe, whom the poets have celebrated ſo much. This prohibition added flame to flame, and wiſh to wiſh; for though our tongues were reſtrained, they could not ſilence our pens, which commonly expreſs the ſentiments of the heart with more liberty, becauſe the preſence of the beloved object often confounds the moſt determined intention, and puts to ſilence the moſt undaunted tongue.

'Good Heaven! what letters did I write! what chaſte endearing anſwers did I receive! what ſongs did I compoſe, inſpired by love, that diſplayed the ſoul unmaſked, inflamed each [illegible]ft [illegible]ſire, regaled the fancy, and indulged the wiſh[illegible] in fine, [illegible] patience being exhauſted, and my heart almoſt con[illegible]d with the deſire of ſeeing her, I reſolved to execut[illegible]e ſcheme which ſeemed moſt favourable for my love and preten[illegible]ons; and this I put in practice, by de[illegible]ng her in [illegible]arriage of her father, who thanked [illegible]our I intended him, by this propoſal of ma[illegible]ying [illegible]is family; but ſaid, as my own father was alive, it was properly his buſineſs to make the demand; for, unleſs his conſent and inclination were obtained, Lucinda was not a perſon either to be given or taken in marriage by ſtealth. I thanked him in my turn, for his politeneſs; and thinking there was a great deal of reaſon in what he ſaid, aſſured myſelf that my father would readily agree to the propoſal whenever I ſhould make it. I therefore flew inſtantly to diſcloſe my ſentiments to him on that ſubject; and entering the cloſet where he was, found him reading a letter, which, before I could ſpeak a ſyllable, he put into my hands, ſaying, "By this letter, Cardenio, you will ſee how much Duke Ricardo is inclined to do you ſervice." This Duke Ricardo, as you muſt know, gentlemen, is a grandee of Spain, whoſe eſtate lies in the beſt part of this province. I took and read this letter, which was ſo extremely kind, that I myſelf ſhould have blamed my father, had he refuſed to comply with what he requeſted in it: this was to ſend me immediately to his houſe, he being de-

ſirous

ſirous that I ſhould live as the companion, not the ſervant, of his eldeſt ſon: and he would take care of my fortune in ſuch a manner as ſhould manifeſt the eſteem he had for me. Having read the letter, I was ſtruck dumb at knowing the contents; eſpecially when I heard my father pronounce, "Two days hence, Cardenio, you ſhall ſet out, according to the pleaſure of the duke; and you ought to thank God for having opened an avenue, through which you may arrive at that fortune I know you deſerve." To this declaration he added other ſervices, as became a prudent father; and I, the night before I departed, finding means to ſpeak with Lucinda, told her [illegible] had happened: nay, I even imparted it to her [illegible]er, entreating him to wait a few days, without diſpoſing of her to any other, until I ſhould know in what manner Ricardo wanted to employ me. He gave me [illegible] pr[illegible]iſe accordingly, and ſhe confirmed it by a [illegible]nd v[illegible]vs and anxious ſighs.

'I at length arrived at the ſeat of Duke Ricardo, by whom I was ſo well received and kindly entertained, that Envy preſently began to do her office, poſſeſſing the old ſervants with the opinion, that every expreſſion of favour I received from the duke was prejudicial to their intereſt. But he who was moſt rejoiced at my reſiding there, was the duke's ſecond ſon, Fernando, a gay, genteel, liberal, and amorous youth, who in a ſhort time was pleaſed to honour me with ſuch intimacy of friendſhip as became the ſubject of every body's diſcourſe; and though the eldeſt brother loved and favoured me alſo, he did not carry his favour and affection to ſuch a pitch. Now, as all ſecrets are communicated between friends, and the confidence in which I lived with Fernando was ſoon changed into friendſhip, he imparted to me his moſt ſecret thoughts, and, among other things, a love affair that gave him a good deal of diſquiet. In ſhort, he had an inclination for a country maid, who was his father's vaſſal: her parents were very rich; and ſhe herſelf ſo beautiful, reſerved, modeſt, and diſcreet, that nobody who knew her could determine

mine in which of theſe qualifications ſhe moſt excelled. Theſe accompliſhments of this fair maiden inflamed the deſires of Don Fernando to ſuch a pitch, that he reſolved, as the eaſieſt conqueſt over her virtue, to promiſe he would marry her; for he found it impoſſible to gratify his wiſh in any other way. I, prompted and bound by my friendſhip, endeavoured to diſſuade and divert him from his purpoſe, by the ſtrongeſt arguments and moſt lively examples I could produce; but finding them all ineffectual, I reſolved to communicate the whole affair to his father Duke Ricardo.

'Don Fernando, having abundance of cunning and diſcernment, ſuſpected my intention; and was afraid, that the obligation he ſaw I was under, as a faithful ſervant, would not allow him to conceal an affair ſo prejudicial to the honour of the duke my maſter; he therefore, in order to divert and deceive me, obſerved that he could find no better remedy to remove the beauty that enſlaved him from his remembrance, than that of abſence for a few months; and therefore deſired that we ſhould go to my father's houſe, upon pretence, as he would tell the duke, of ſeeing and purchaſing ſome fine horſes in our town, which produces the beſt in the world. Scarce had he uttered this propoſal, when, prompted by my love, excluſive of his prudent intention, I approved of it, as one of the beſt concerted ſchemes that could be imagined; and was rejoicing at meeting with ſuch a fair conjuncture and occaſion of returning to my dear Lucinda. Induced by this motive and deſire, I applauded his pretence, and enforced his propoſal, adviſing him to execute his plan with all ſpeed; for abſence would certainly do it's office, in ſpite of the moſt eſtabliſhed inclination. At that very time, as I afterwards underſtood, he had enjoyed the country maid, under the title of her huſband, and waited for an opportunity of owning it with ſafety to himſelf, being afraid of the duke's reſentment, in caſe he ſhould diſcover his folly. It happened afterwards, that as love in young people is, for the moſt part, nothing but appetite, whoſe

only

only aim is pleaſure, and this being enjoyed, what ſeemed love vaniſhes, becauſe it cannot exceed the bounds of nature; whereas real love is bounded by no ſuch limits: I ſay, as ſoon as Don Fernando enjoyed the country girl, his deſires were appeaſed, and his raptures abated; and if at firſt he pretended to ſeek a cure for them in abſence, he now earneſtly deſired to be abſent, that he might avoid any farther gratification.

'The duke having given him leave, and ordered me to attend him, we arrived at our habitation, where he was received by my father in a manner ſuitable to his rank and family. I went inſtantly to viſit Lucinda, whoſe preſence in a moment rekindled all my deſires, which indeed were neither dead or decayed within me: and, to my infinite misfortune, I made Don Fernando acquainted with my love, becauſe I thought, by the laws of that intimate friendſhip with which he honoured me, I ought to conceal nothing from him. I therefore praiſed the beauty, grace, and diſcretion of Lucinda, in ſuch a manner, as excited his curioſity to ſee ſuch an accompliſhed young lady. Prompted by my evil genius, I gratified his deſire, ſhewing her to him one night by the light of a taper at the window from which I uſed to converſe with her. At ſight of her he abſolutely forgot all the beauties he had formerly ſeen; he was ſtruck dumb with wonder; he ſeemed to loſe all ſenſe, became abſent and penſive; and, in ſhort, enamoured of her to that degree, which you will perceive in the courſe of my unhappy ſtory: and the more to inflame his deſire, which he concealed from me, and diſcloſed to Heaven alone, he happened one day to find a letter which ſhe had written, deſiring me to aſk her in marriage of her father, ſo prudent, modeſt, and tender, that, upon peruſing it, he ſaid, "In Lucinda alone are concentered all the charms of beauty and underſtanding, which are divided among the reſt of her ſex." True it is, and I will now confeſs it; and although I knew how juſtly Fernando applauded Lucinda, I was vexed at hearing theſe praiſes proceed from his mouth, and began to dread and ſuſpect his

his inclination: for he was eternally talking of her, and always turned the difcourfe upon her, even when he was obliged to bring her in by the head and fhoulders; a circumftance that waked a fort of jealoufy within me: not that I imagined aught could alter the faith and affection of Lucinda; yet, notwithftanding, my deftiny made me dread the very thing that confidence infured. Don Fernando always contrived means to read the letters I fent to Lucinda, together with her anfwers, on pretence of being highly pleafed with the good fenfe they contained; and it once happened, that fhe having defired me to fend her a book of knight-errantry, in which fhe took great delight, called Amadis de Gaul.

Don Quixote no fooner heard him mention this book, than he faid, 'Had you told me in the beginning of your ftory, that your miftrefs Lucinda was an admirer of books of chivalry, you would have had no occafion to ufe any other argument to convince me of her fublime underftanding; which I fhould not have deemed quite fo extraordinary as you have reprefented it, had fhe wanted relifh for that fort of reading: wherefore you need not fpend any more words with me, in extolling her beauty, virtue, and good fenfe; for, upon the knowledge of her tafte only, I pronounce her to be the moft beautiful and difcreet lady in the univerfe. I wifh, however, that you had fent along with Amadis de Gaul, the worthy Don Rugel of Greece; for I know your miftrefs Lucinda would have been greatly pleafed with Darayra and Garayra, together with the judicious fayings of the fhepherd Darinel, and thofe admirable verfes of his eclogues, fung and reprefented by him with fuch grace, fpirit, and difcretion; but the time will come when that omiffion may be rectified: indeed, the fault may be repaired as foon as you fhall pleafe to accompany me to the place of my habitation, where I can fupply you with more than three hundred books, which are the feaft of my foul, and entertainment of my life; though now I recollect, not one of them remains in my pof-

feffion;

session; thanks to the malice of wicked and envious inchanters. But I hope you will be so good as to forgive me for having contradicted my promise of not interrupting your story; for when the subject turns upon chivalry or knights-errant, I can no more forbear interposing, than the rays of the sun can cease to warm, or those of the moon to wet: but I ask pardon; pray proceed with your story; for that is the most to the purpose at present.'

While Don Quixote was talking in this manner, Cardenio hung his head, and fell into a profound reverie; and though the knight repeated his request, would neither lift up his head, nor answer one word. At length, after a long pause, looking up, 'You cannot,' said he, 'beat it out of my thoughts; nor is there any person upon earth, who can persuade me to the contrary; and he must be a blockhead who imagines or believes otherwise, than that the villain Master Elisabat carried on a criminal correspondence with Queen Madasima.'—'By Heaven, 'tis false,' cried Don Quixote, with great indignation and impetuosity, as usual: 'that report is the effect of malice, or rather mere wantonness. Queen Madasima was a most royal dame, and it is not to be presumed that a princess of her rank would confer favours upon a mere quack doctor. Whoever thinks otherwise, lies like a very great scoundrel; and I will prove him such either on horseback or a foot, armed or disarmed, by night or by day, as will most suit his inclination.' Cardenio stood all the while looking attentively at him, and being by this time seized with the paroxism of his madness, could not proceed with his story; neither, if he had proceeded, would Don Quixote have listened to it, for he was offended at what he had heard to the prejudice of Queen Madasima,* whose reputation interested him as much as if she had been actu-

ally

* Queen Madasima, a lady in Amadis de Gaul, attended by one Elisabat, a surgeon, with whom she travels, and lies in woods and desarts.

ally his own miſtreſs: ſuch wonderful impreſſion had thoſe profane books made on his imagination!

I ſay, then, Cardenio being by this time under the influence of his diſtraction, and hearing himſelf called liar and ſcoundrel, with other terms of reproach, could not reliſh the joke; but, ſnatching up a large pebble that lay near him, aimed it ſo ſucceſsfully at Don Quixote's breaſt, that he fell fairly on his back with the blow. Sancho Panza, ſeeing his maſter treated in this manner, attacked the madman with his clenched fiſt; but the lunatick received him with ſuch a blow, as knocked him down to the ground at once, and then getting upon him, mauled his carcaſe to his heart's content; while the goatherd, who attempted to defend him, met with the ſame fate. Having thus maſtered and pummelled them all round, he left off, and with great compoſure retreated to the thickets from whence he came. Sancho then aroſe; and, enraged to find himſelf handled in this manner for nothing, ran to take vengeance on the goatherd, ſaying that he was to blame for the whole, becauſe he had not informed him, that the man had intervals of madneſs; which had they known, they might have guarded againſt them. The goatherd affirmed, that he had apprized them of what might happen, and if they had not heard him, it was no fault of his. The ſquire replied; the goatherd retorted; and, in concluſion, they went by the ears together, and pulled each other's beards with ſuch fury, that there would not have been a ſingle hair left on either chin, had not Don Quixote interpoſed. Sancho, grappling ſtoutly with his adverſary, cried, 'Give me leave, Sir Knight of the Rueful Countenance; this is no armed knight, but a plebeian like myſelf, of whom I can ſecurely take ſatisfaction for the injury he has done me, by fighting with him hand to hand, like a man of honour.'—'True, ſaid Don Quixote; 'but the cauſe of what hath happened cannot be juſtly imputed to him.' Peace accordingly enſued; and the knight aſked the goatherd again, if there was a poſſibility of finding Cardenio; for he was extremely deſirous of

of hearing the conclufion of his ftory. The goatherd repeated what he had faid before, that he did not certainly know whereabout he refided; but, if they fhould ftay long in thefe parts, they could not fail of finding him either mad or fober.

CHAPTER XI.

Of the ftrange Adventures that happened to the valiant Knight of La Mancha in the Sierra Morena, where he did Penance, in Imitation of Beltenbros.

DON Quixote, having taken leave of the goatherd, and mounted Rozinante again, commanded Sancho to follow him; and the fquire, beftriding his afs, obeyed with great reluctance. As they advanced at leifure, into the moft rocky part of the mountain, Sancho longed to death for an opportunity of talking, and waited impatiently till his mafter fhould begin, that he might not tranfgrefs his orders; but, being utterly unable to keep filence any longer, 'Sir Don Quixote,' faid he, 'be pleafed to give me your bleffing, and grant me leave to return immediately to my wife and children, with whom, at leaft, I can talk and prattle my fill; for in commanding me to travel with you, through thefe defarts, night and day, without opening my lips when I am difpofed to fpeak, your worfhip buries me alive: if it were the will of Heaven, that beafts fpoke as they did in the days of Hyffop, I fhould be lefs uneafy, becaufe I would converfe with my afs at pleafure, and that would be fome comfort to me in my misfortunes; but it is a very hard cafe, and what I cannot bear with patience, to travel in fearch of adventures all my life, and find nought but rib-roaftings, blanketings, robberies, and fifty-cuffs; and, after all, be obliged to few up our mouths, without daring to bring up what lies upon our ftomachs, more than if we were dumb.'

'I underftand thee, Sancho,' replied the knight; 'thou art impatient until I take off the interdiction I have laid upon thy tongue. I take it off, then; fay what you pleafe, on condition that this repeal fhall laft

no

no longer than our ſtay in this mountain.'—Be it ſo,' ſaid Sancho; 'to-day I will ſpeak, to-morrow God's will be done; and the firſt uſe I make of this ſafe conduct, is to aſk why your worſhip was in ſuch a paſſion about that Queen Magimaſa, or how d'ye call her; or of what ſignification was it to you, whether that ſame Abat was her ſweetheart or not? Had your worſhip overlooked that circumſtance, that you had no concern in, I firmly believe the madman would have gone on with his ſtory, and you would have ſaved yourſelf the pebble-ſhot, with more than half a dozen kicks and cuffs.'

'In faith, Sancho,' anſwered Don Quixote, 'if thou kneweſt, as I do, what an honourable and princely lady that Queen Madaſima was, thou wouldſt ſay, I had great patience in forbearing to demoliſh the mouth from whence ſuch blaſphemy proceeded; for ſure, 'tis no leſs to ſay, or even think, that a queen ſhould take a ſurgeon to her bed. The truth of the ſtory is, that Maſter Eliſabat, whom the lunatic mentioned, was a man of prudence and diſcernment, and ſerved the queen in quality of tutor and phyſician; but to ſuppoſe that there was any indecent familiarities between them, is a piece of folly that deſerves to be ſeverely chaſtiſed: and to convince thee that Cardenio knew not what he ſaid, thou mayeſt remember he was deprived of his ſenſes, when he took notice of that circumſtance.'—'This I'll venture to ſay,' replied the ſquire, 'that the words of a madman are not to be minded; for, if fortune had not ſtood your worſhip's friend, and directed to your breaſt the pebble that was aimed at your head, we ſhould have been in a fine condition, for your having quarrelled about that lady, whom Heaven confound! you may depend upon it, Cardenio would have been acquitted on account of his madneſs.'

'Every knight-errant,' ſaid Don Quixote, 'is obliged to quarrel with thoſe who are out of their ſenſes, as well as thoſe who are in them, if they aſperſe the honour of women, whatſoever they might be. How much

 more,

more, then, in behalf of princeſſes of ſuch high quality and accompliſhments as adorned Queen Madaſima, for whom I have a particular affection, on account of her admirable qualifications; for, over and above her beauty, ſhe had a great ſhare of prudence and reſignation in her calamities, which were manifold: and the advice and company of Maſter Eliſabat were of great ſervice in encouraging her to bear her afflictions with patience and equanimity. From hence, the ignorant and malicious vulgar took occaſion to ſay and ſuppoſe, that ſhe admitted of his careſſes; but they lye. I ſay again, all thoſe who either ſay or think ſo, lye in their throats, and I will tell them ſo two hundred times over.'—' As for my own part,' ſaid Sancho, ' I neither ſay nor think any ſuch thing; thoſe that do may dine upon it: if they were too familiar, by this time they have anſwered for it to God. I prune my own vine, and know nothing about thine. I never meddle with other people's concerns. He that buys and denies, his own purſe belyes,' as the ſaying is. Bare I was born; and bare I remain; and if I loſe nothing, as little I gain. If he did lie with her, that is no matter of mine. Many people hunt the hare without ever finding the ſcut; for, Till you hedge in the ſky, the ſtarlings will fly. And evil tongues will not refrain from God himſelf.'

' Good Heaven,' cried Don Quixote, ' what fooleries art thou ſtringing together, Sancho? Pray, what relation have theſe old ſaws to the ſubject of our converſation? I charge thee to hold thy peace, and henceforth entertain thyſelf with ſpurring up thy aſs, and leave off talking of things which do not concern thee: or let thy whole five ſenſes be convinced, that every thing I have done, am doing, or will do, is highly reaſonable, and in exact conformity with the laws of chivalry, which I underſtand better than any knight that ever profeſſed the order.' ' Yes, Sir,' replied Sancho, ' to be ſure it is an excellent law of chivalry, to ſtroll about bewildred in theſe mountains, where there is neither high road nor bye path, in ſearch of a madman, who, after

we have found him, will perhaps take it in his head to finiſh what he left undone; not of his ſtory, but of your worſhip's pate and my ribs, which he may chance to break in a thouſand ſhivers.'

'I ſay again, Sancho,' reſumed the knight, 'hold thy peace; for I would have thee know, that I am not detained in this place, ſo much by the deſire of finding the lunatick, as of performing in it an exploit by which I ſhall acquire everlaſting renown throughout the whole known world; and put the ſtamp of perfection upon the wonderful efforts of knight-errantry?'—'And will this exploit be attended with much danger?' ſaid Sancho. 'No,' anſwered he of the rueful countenance; 'though the dice may run ſo as to produce bad inſtead of good fortune; but the whole will depend upon thy diligence.'—'Upon my diligence!' cried the ſquire. 'Without doubt,' anſwered his maſter; 'for, if thou wilt return ſpeedily, from the place to which thou muſt be ſent, my affliction will ſoon be at an end, and my glory will ſpeedily begin: and, that I may no longer keep thee in ſuſpence about the meaning of my words, know, Sancho, that the celebrated Amadis de Gaul was one of the moſt perfect knights-errant: one of them, ſaid I? he alone was the only, ſingle, chief, and ſuperior of all his cotemporaries. Contempt and ſhame upon Bellianis, and all thoſe who ſay he equalled him in any one particular; for, by this light, they are all egregiouſly deceived! I ſay, moreover, when a painter deſires to become famous in his art, he endeavours to imitate the originals painted by the moſt noted artiſts; and the ſame maxim holds in every other ſcience and exerciſe that adorns a commonwealth: therefore, he who wants to attain the virtues of prudence and equanimity, muſt endeavour to imitate the character of Ulyſſes, in whoſe perſon and ſufferings Homer has drawn an excellent picture of wiſdom and patience, as Virgil, in the perſon of Æneas, repreſents the piety of an affectionate ſon, and the ſagacity of a wiſe and valiant general: not that they are deſcribed and ſet forth exactly as they were, but as they

they ought to have been, as examples of virtue to poſterity. In the ſame manner, Amadis ſhone like the north-ſtar, the Lucifer and ſun of all valiant and amorous knights; and therefore muſt be imitated as a pattern by all thoſe who ſerve under the banners of love and chivalry. Now, this being the caſe, friend Sancho, I find that the knight-errant who approaches the neareſt to this great original, will bid faireſt for attaining the perfection of chivalry: and one of the circumſtances in which that knight gave the higheſt proofs of his worth, prudence, valour, patience, conſtancy, and love, was his retiring to the poor rock, when he was in diſgrace with his miſtreſs Oriana, there to do penance under the feigned name Beltenebros *; an appellation certainly very ſignificant and proper to the way of life he had voluntarily choſen. As it is therefore more eaſy for me to imitate him in this than in cleaving giants, beheading ſerpents, ſlaying dragons, overthrowing armies, ſcattering navies, and diſſolving inchantments, and as this ſolitude is ſo well adapted to ſuch deſigns, I am reſolved to ſeize occaſion by the forelock, which ſhe now ſo complaiſantly preſents.'

'In reality,' ſaid Sancho, 'what is your worſhip reſolved to do in this remote place?'—'Have I not already told thee,' replied the knight, 'that I am determined to imitate Amadis, in acting the deſperado, the lunatick, the madman? to copy alſo after the valiant Don Roldan, when he diſcovered, in a fountain, certain marks by which he was convinced that Angelica the Fair had committed uncleanneſs with Medoro. A piece of information attended with ſuch grief and anxiety, that he ran mad, tore up the trees by the root, ſullied the waters of the tranſparent ſprings, ſlew ſhepherds, deſtroyed flocks, ſet fire to cottages, demoliſhed houſes, dragged mares along the ground, and performed a thouſand other inſolent feats worthy to be inſerted in Fame's eternal record: and becauſe I do not propoſe to imitate Roldan, or Orlando, or Rotolando, for he went by all theſe

 names,

* The Beautiful Obſcure.

names, literally in all the extravagancies he thought, ſaid, and did, I will copy his outlines as well as I can, in the moſt eſſential parts of his character; nay, perhaps, I may content myſelf with the ſole imitation of Amadis, who, by his tears and ſighs alone, acquired as much fame as the other with all the miſchief he did.'—' If I apprehend the matter aright,' ſaid Sancho, ' the knights who played ſuch mad pranks were provoked, and had ſome reaſon to act theſe fooleries and penance: but what cauſe hath your worſhip to turn madman? With what lady are you in diſgrace? or by what ſigns are you given to underſtand that the Lady Dulcinea del Toboſo has been playing the rogue either with Moor or Chriſtian!' —' This is the point,' anſwered Don Quixote, ' and refinement of my deſign; a knight who turns madman, becauſe he cannot help it, can claim no merit from his misfortune; but the great matter is to run diſtracted without cauſe, and give my lady reaſon to conceive what I could do were I moiſtened, when I can do ſo much being dry. More eſpecially, as I have ſufficient cauſe in the long abſence to which I am doomed by my ever darling miſtreſs Dulcinea del Toboſo; for, according to the words of the ſhepherd Matias Ambroſio, which thou mayeſt have heard,

" In abſence of my charming fair,
" I ſuffer all thoſe ills I fear."

Wherefore, friend Sancho, you need not throw away your time unprofitably, in adviſing me to refrain from an imitation at once ſo admirable, rare, and happy: mad I am, and mad I ſhall be, until thou returneſt with the anſwer of a letter which I propoſe to ſend by thee to my Lady Dulcinea; and if it be ſuch as I am entitled to by my love and fidelity, my diſtraction and penance will end; but, ſhould it be otherwiſe, I ſhall run mad in earneſt, and conſequently be inſenſible of my misfortune: wherefore, let her anſwer be as it may, it will extricate me from the doubts and affliction in which thou leaveſt me; becauſe, if it be favourable, I ſhall enjoy

enjoy it in my right ſenſes; and if it be unfavourable, my frenzy will not feel it.

'But tell me, Sancho, haſt thou taken care of Mambrino's helmet, which I ſaw thee take up, after that ungrateful vagabond endeavoured in vain to break it in pieces; a circumſtance that proves the excellency of its temper?' To this exclamation, Sancho replied, 'Fore God! Sir Knight of the Rueful Countenance, I cannot ſuffer, nor bear with patience, ſome things which your worſhip ſays; for they make me imagine, that all you have mentioned about chivalry, and acquiring kingdoms and empires, and giving away iſlands, with other favours and preſents, according to the practice of knights-errant, is nothing but puffs of falſhood, and the mere effect of piction or fiction, or what do you call it? for who that hears your worſhip call a barber's baſon the helmet of Mambrino, and ſees you continue in that error ſo many days, but will believe, that he who affirms ſuch nonſenſe muſt be very much crazed in his underſtanding? The baſon, which is all bruiſed and battered, I have put up in my bag, in order to be mended at home, and uſed for the ſervice of my own beard, if ever, by the grace of God, I come to ſee my wife and family.'—'Hark ye, Sancho,' ſaid Don Quixote, 'by the ſame oath you ſwore, I ſwear again, that thou haſt the moſt ſlender underſtanding that any ſquire in this world does or ever did poſſeſs! Is it poſſible, that, after all thy travelling in my company, thou art not convinced that every thing belonging to knights-errant, appears chimera, folly, and diſtraction, being metamorphoſed into the reverſe of what it is, by the power of a tribe of inchanters who attend us, changing, converting, and reſtoring each particular, according to their pleaſure, and the inclination they have to favour or annoy us: for which reaſon, what ſeems a barber's baſon to thee, I can eaſily diſcern to be the helmet of Mambrino; and perhaps to a third it will aſſume a quite different appearance; and I cannot but admire the providence of the ſage who is my friend, in making that

which is really and truly Mambrino's helmet, appear a bason to the rest of mankind; because it is of such inestimable value, that if it was known, the whole world would combine to ravish it from me; but as it appears to them no more than a barber's bason, they never attempt to obtain it. This was plainly the case with the villain, who, having endeavoured to break it in pieces, left it on the ground, when he went off; whereas, had he known what it was, in good faith he would not have quitted it so easily. Keep it therefore with care, my friend, for at present there is no occasion for it; on the contrary, I shall strip off all my armour, and remain naked as I was born, in case I be inclined to imitate the penance of Roldan, rather than that of Amadis.'

Conversing in this manner, they arrived at the foot of a high mountain that stood alone, as if it had been cut out from the rest that surrounded it. A gentle rill murmured by the skirts of it, winding along a meadow, so green and fertile, that it ravished the spectator's eye; while a number of forest trees that grew around, together with some delicious herbs and flowers, conspired to make the place inchanting. This was the scene in which the knight of the rueful countenance chose to do penance; and therefore he no sooner perceived it, than he began to exclaim aloud, as if he had actually lost his senses, 'This is the spot, ye heavens! which I chuse and appoint my residence, while I bewail that misfortune to which you yourselves have reduced me. This is the place where the tears from these eyes will increase the waters of that little brook; and where my profound and uninterrupted sighs will incessantly move the leaves of these mountain-oaks, in witness and testimony of the pangs which my tormented heart endures. O, ye rural deities, whosoever ye are, who take up your mansion in this uninhabited place, give ear to the complaints of an unhappy lover, whom a tedious absence and imaginary doubts have brought to lament among these craggy hills, and bemoan the cruel disposition of that ungrateful fair, who is the end and perfection of all human

beauty!

beauty! O, ye nymphs and dryads, who were wont to inhabit the hills and groves, (ſo may no nimble and laſcivious ſatyrs, by whom you are beloved, though loved in vain, diſturb your ſweet repoſe,) help me to bewail my miſhap: or at leaſt diſdain not to hear my moan!—O, Dulcinea del Toboſo! light of my darkneſs! glory of my affliction! north-ſtar of my inclinations! and planet of my fortune! as Heaven ſhall pour upon you the bleſſings which you aſk; conſider the place and condition to which your abſence hath exiled me, and put ſuch a period to my woe, as my fidelity ſhall ſeem to deſerve! O, ye ſolitary trees, who henceforth are to bear me company in this retreat, convince me, by the gentle waving of your boughs, that my preſence gives you no diſguſt!—And thou, my ſquire, the agreeable companion of my good and evil fortune, faithfully retain in thy remembrance what thou ſhalt ſee me do, that thou mayeſt recount and rehearſe every circumſtance to the lovely cauſe of all my diſtraction!' So ſaying, he alighted; and, taking off the bridle and ſaddle from Rozinante, gave him a ſlap on the buttocks, pronouncing theſe words: 'He who is a ſlave himſelf, beſtows freedom upon thee, O ſteed, as excellent in thy qualities as unlucky in thy fate! go whereſoever thou wilt: thou beareſt engraven on thy forehead, that thou waſt never equalled in ſwiftneſs, either by Aſtolpho's Hypogriff, or the renowned Frontino, that coſt Bradamante ſo dear.'

Sancho, hearing this apoſtrophe, 'My bleſſing,' cried he, 'be upon him whoſe induſtry now ſaves us the trouble of taking the halter from the head of Dapple*, who, in good faith, ſhould not want ſlaps on the buttocks, nor abundance of fine things ſaid in his praiſe; but, if he was here, I would not conſent to his being turned looſe, there being no reaſon for ſo doing; for he was never acquainted with love and deſpair, no more than I, who was his maſter, while it pleaſed God I ſhould be ſo: and truly, Sir Knight of the Rueful Countenance,

* Lo! Sancho's aſs hath diſappeared again.

Countenance, if this departure of mine, and diſtraction of your worſhip, are really to take place, you had better ſaddle Rozinante again, to ſupply the want of Dapple; by which means a great deal of time will be ſaved in my going and coming; whereas, if I make the journey on foot, I know not when it will be performed; for, in ſhort, I am a very ſorry walker.'—'I ſay, be it ſo then, Sancho,' anſwered Don Quixote: 'I approve of thy propoſal; and aſſure thee, that thou ſhalt ſet out in three days, during which I would have thee take notice of what I ſhall do for her ſake, that thou mayeſt be able to give her a full account of my behaviour.'—'What more can I ſee,' ſaid Sancho, 'than I have ſeen already?'—'You are pretty perfect in your ſtory,' anſwered the knight; 'but, as yet, I have not torn my cloaths, ſcattered my armour, and daſhed my head againſt the rocks, nor performed many other things of this ſort, which thou wilt behold with admiration!'—'For the love of God, Sir!' cried Sancho, 'take care how you daſh your head againſt the rocks; for you may chance to meet with ſuch a one as will, at the firſt puſh, put the finiſhing ſtroke to this whole ſcheme of penance; and I ſhould think, that as knocks of the head are abſolutely neceſſary to compleat the work, your worſhip might content yourſelf, ſeeing the whole affair is a ſham, a counterfeit, and a joke; I ſay, your worſhip might content yourſelf with ramming your ſkull againſt water, or ſome ſoft thing, like a cotton bag; and leave it to my care to tell my lady, that your worſhip went to loggerheads with the point of a rock a thouſand times harder than adamant.'—'Friend Sancho,' replied the knight, 'I am obliged to thee, for thy kind intention; but, thou muſt know, that what I do is not a ſham, but a very ſerious matter; for, to behave otherwiſe, were to tranſgreſs the orders of chivalry, which forbid us to lye, under pain of being degraded; and you know, that to ſubſtitute one thing inſtead of another, is downright telling a lye: wherefore, my knocks on the head muſt be real, hard, and effectu-
al,

al, and not fophifticated or imaginary; and it will be neceffary to leave me fome lint for my wounds, fince it was the will of fate that we fhould lofe the balfam.'

'It was a much greater misfortune,' faid the fquire, 'to lofe the afs, and with him the lint and all; but I befeech your worfhip not to talk of that accurfed drench, the fole mention of which not only turns my ftomach, but even my very foul: and I befeech you, moreover, to fuppofe we have paffed thofe three days, which you have appointed for fhewing me your mad pranks; for I take them all for granted, and will tell wonders of them to my lady. Write the letter, therefore, and difpatch me forthwith: becaufe I am impatient till I return and deliver your worfhip from that purgatory in which I leave you.'—'Purgatory! call you it, Sancho?' replied Don Quixote: 'it rather deferves the name of hell, or fomething worfe, if worfe can be.'—'I have heard,' faid the fquire, 'that from hell there is no retention.'—'I know not,' replied the knight, 'what you mean by retention.'—'Retention,' anfwered Sancho, 'fignifies, that whofoever goeth to hell, neither will nor can come back again. The contrary of which fhall happen to your worfhip, or my feet will mifgive me, provided I carry fpurs to quicken Rozinante: and fet me once face to face before my Lady Dulcinea, at Tobofo, I will tell her fuch ftories of the folly and madnefs, for they are both the fame thing, which your worfhip has committed, and will then be committing, that though I fhould find her harder than a cork-tree, I will make her as pliant as a glove; and, with her fweet and honied anfwer, return through the air, like a witch, and deliver your worfhip from this purgatory, that appears like hell, though it be not really fo, becaufe there are fome hopes of getting out of it; whereas thofe who are actually in hell can have no fuch expectation; and I dare fay, your worfhip will not advance any thing to the contrary.'

'That is all very true,' faid he of the rueful countenance; 'but how fhall we make fhift to write this letter?"

ter?'—' Aye, and the bill for the colts?' added Sancho. ' That ſhall be inſerted in the letter,' anſwered his maſter; ' and I think, as there is no paper to be had in this place, the beſt thing we can do, will be to write in the manner of the ancients, on the leaf of a tree, or on waxen tables; though, I believe, thoſe will be as difficult to be found as the paper. But, now I remember what will do well, and excellently well, for our purpoſe: I will write it in the pocket-book which belonged to Cardenio, and thou ſhalt take care to have it fairly tranſcribed in the firſt place where thou canſt find a ſchool-maſter or a pariſh-clerk to copy it. But by no means employ a ſcrivener, who may write it in ſuch an unintelligible court-hand, that Satan himſelf could not underſtand it.'—' But what is to be done about the ſigning of it?' ſaid Sancho. ' Love-letters are never ſigned,' replied Don Quixote. ' True,' reſumed the ſquire; ' but all bills muſt be ſubſcribed: and if this of yours were to be copied, they would ſay the ſubſcription was counterfeit, and I might go whiſtle for my colts.'—' The bill ſhall be ſubſcribed with my own hand in the pocket-book; which my niece ſhall no ſooner ſee, than ſhe will comply with the order, without any farther objection: and with regard to the letter, inſtead of my ſubſcription, thou ſhalt cauſe to be inſerted, " Yours, till death; the Knight of the Rueful Countenance." And though it be written by another hand, it is of ſmall importance, becauſe, now I remember, Dulcinea can neither read or write, nor ever ſet eyes on any writing or letter of mine: for our mutual love has been altogether platonick, without extending farther than a modeſt glance; and even that ſo ſeldom, that I can ſafely ſwear, in twelve years, during which I have loved her more than the light of theſe eyes, which will one day be cloſed in duſt, I have not ſeen her more than four times; and even in theſe four times, perhaps, ſhe hath not perceived me looking at her more than once. Such is the reſtraint and reſerve in which her father

ther Lorenzo Corchuelo, and her mother Aldonza Nogales, have brought her up!'

'Ah, ha!' cried Sancho, 'is the daughter of Lorenzo Corchuelo, whofe other name is Aldonza Lorenza, the fame with the Lady Dulcinea?'—'Yes,' anfwered the knight; 'and fhe deferves to be lady of the whole univerfe.'—'I know her perfectly well,' faid Sancho; 'and this will venture to fay in her behalf, that fhe will pitch the bar as well as e'er a lufty young fellow in the village. Blefs the fender! fhe is a ftrapper, tall, and hale wind and limb; and can lift out of the mire any fquire or knight-errant, who fhall chufe her for his fweetheart. Ah! the whore's chick! what a pair of lungs and voice has fhe got! I heard her one day halloo from the belfry to fome young fellows of her acquaintance, who were at work in a corn-field of her father's; and, though it was at the diftance of half a league, they heard her as plain as if they had been right under the fteeple; and what is better ftill, fhe is not at all coy, but behaves herfelf civilly; and jokes, and romps, and plays the rogue with any body. Now, Sir Knight of the Rueful Countenance, I fay that your worfhip not only has caufe to run mad for her, but even to defpair and hang yourfelf; and I am fure nobody that heard it, but would fay you had done extremely well; even though the devil fhould run away with you; and truly, I wifh I were now upon my way, merely to fee her; for I have not beheld her thefe many days: and, furely, fhe muft be greatly altered; for the fun and weather does very much damage to the face of a woman who is always at work in the field. To tell you the truth, Sir Don Quixote, I have hitherto lived in great ignorance with refpect to my Lady Dulcinea, whom I verily believed to be fome princefs, that your worfhip was in love with; or a perfon of fuch rank as to deferve the rich prefents you fent to her; namely, the Bifcayan and galley-flaves, with many others whom you conquered in the courfe of your numberlefs victories, both before and fince I have been your fquire.

But

But, when one confiders the affair, what benefits can my Lady Aldonza Lorenzo (I mean, my Lady Dulcinea del Tobofo) reap from your worfhip's fending, or having fent thofe whom you overcome in battle, to fall upon their knees before her? efpecially as they might chance to come at a time when fhe is bufy, carding flax and threfhing corn; in which cafe, they would be afhamed to fee her, and fhe laugh and be out of humour at their arrival.'—' I have frequently obferved before now, Sancho,' faid Don Quixote, ' that thou art an everlafting babler; and, though of a fhallow underftanding, thy bluntnefs borders often on feverity; but, to convince thee of thy own ignorance and my difcretion, thou fhalt give ear to a fhort ftory which I will relate.

' Know, then, that once upon a time, a certain handfome widow, young, free, wealthy, and, above all, good-humoured, fell in love with a thick, fquat, brawny, lay-brother, belonging to a neighbouring convent; the fuperior of which being informed of the affair, faid to the widow, one day, by way of brotherly reproof, " I am amazed, Madam, and not without caufe, that a lady of your rank, beauty, and fortune, fhould beftow your affection upon fuch a low, fimple, clownifh fellow; when there are fo many mafters, graduates, and divines, in the convent, among whom your ladyfhip may chufe, as one picks pears, faying, " This I like, that I loath." The lady anfwered, with great freedom and vivacity, " Signior, you are very much deceived, and very old-fafhioned in your opinion, if you think I have made a bad choice in that fellow who feems fo fimple: for, in that particular which I admire, he is as much of a philofopher, nay, more, than Ariftotle himfelf." In like manner, Sancho, Dulcinea del Tobofo is as proper for my occafions as the higheft princefs upon earth. All the poets, who have celebrated ladies, under names which they invented at pleafure, had not really fuch miftreffes as they defcribe. Doft thou imagine, that all the Amaryllis's, Silvia's, Phillis's,

lis's, Diana's, Galatea's, Alida's, and other names ſo often met with in romances, poems, barbers ſhops, and on the ſtage, actually belonging to ladies of fleſh and blood, who were adored by thoſe who ſing, and have ſung, their praiſes? No, ſurely; but, on the contrary, are, for the moſt part, feigned and adopted as the ſubjects of verſe, that the poets may be thought men of amorous and gallant diſpoſitions. Wherefore, let it ſuffice, that I imagine and believe the worthy Aldonza Lorenzo to be beautiful and modeſt: and as to her pedigree, it is a matter of ſmall importance; there is no neceſſity for taking information on that head, as if ſhe were to be inveſted with ſome order of knighthood; and I take it for granted, that ſhe is the nobleſt princeſs in the univerſe; for, thou muſt know, Sancho, if it be a thing of which thou art ignorant, that the two qualities, which, above all others, inſpire love, are beauty and reputation: and theſe two is Dulcinea in conſummate poſſeſſion of; for in beauty ſhe excels all women, and is equalled by very few in point of reputation. And, to conclude, I imagine that all I have ſaid is true, without exaggeration or diminution. I paint her in my fancy according to my wiſh, as well in beauty as in rank; unexcelled by Helen, unrivalled by Lucretia, or any other heroine of ages paſt, whether Grecian, Roman, or Barbarian; and let people ſay what they will, if I am blamed by the ignorant, I ſhall be acquitted by the moſt rigid of thoſe who are proper judges of the caſe.'—'I ſay,' anſwered Sancho, 'that your worſhip is very much in the right, and I am no better than an aſs: but I know not why I ſhould mention the word aſs; for one ought not to talk of halters in the houſe of a man who was hanged. But give me the letter, and farewell till I return.'

Don Quixote pulled out the memorandum-book, and ſtepping a-ſide, with great compoſure, began to write the letter; which, when he had finiſhed, he called to Sancho, ſaying he wanted to read it to him, that he

 might

might retain it in his memory, in caſe he ſhould loſe it by the way; for every thing was to be feared from his evil fortune. 'Your worſhip,' anſwered Sancho, 'may write it down two or three times in the book, and I will take ſpecial care to convey it ſafely; but it is folly to ſuppoſe that I can retain it in my memory, which is ſo bad, that I have many a time forgot my own name; but, notwithſtanding, pray, Sir, read it to me; I ſhall be hugely rejoiced to hear it; for it muſt certainly be curiouſly penned.'—'Liſten then, and I will read it,' ſaid Don Quixote; who began as follows.

Don Quixote's Letter to Dulcinea del Toboſo.

'Sovereign and ſublime Princeſs,

'HE who is wounded by the edge of abſence, and whoſe heart is ſtuck full of the darts of affliction, moſt divine Dulcinea del Toboſo! wiſhes thee that health which he is not doomed to enjoy. If I am ſcorned by thy beauty, if thy virtue affords me no relief, if thy diſdain completes my misfortune; albeit, I am inured to ſuffering, I can ill ſupport the miſery I bear; which hath not only been exceſſive, but alſo of long duration. My truſty ſquire Sancho will give thee an ample relation, O ungrateful beauty and lovely foe! of the ſituation in which I remain on thy account: if it be thy will to ſuccour me, I am thy ſlave; if not, uſe thy pleaſure; for the end of my life will ſatisfy thy cruelty and my deſire. Thine till death,

The Knight of the Rueful Countenance.'

'By my father's ſoul!' cried Sancho, 'this is the higheſt thing I ever heard. Odds-niggers! how your worſhip writes whatſoever you pleaſe, and how curiouſly you conclude, "The Knight of the Rueful Countenance." I verily believe your worſhip is the devil himſelf, and knows every thing.'—'All that knowledge,' replied the knight, 'is neceſſary for the employment I profeſs.'—'Why, then,' ſaid the ſquire,

'be

'be so good as to write on the other leaf the order for the three colts, and be sure to subscribe distinctly, that when it is presented, your hand-writing may be known.' —'With all my heart!' said Don Quixote, who having written the order, read it aloud in these terms.

'Dear Niece,

'PLEASE to deliver to Sancho Panza, my squire, or order, at sight of this my first bill of colts, three of the five which I left at home in your custody; which three colts I order you to pay, in return for the like number received of him: and this bill, together with his receipt, shall be a sufficient acquittance to you.

'Given in the heart of the brown mountain, the twentieth and second of August, this present year.'

Sancho liked the form, and desired his master to sign it. 'There is no occasion for my signing it,' said Don Quixote, 'with any thing but my cypher, which is sufficient not only for three, but three hundred asses.' —'As to that, I will take your worship's word; and now give me leave to go and saddle Rozinante, which, when I have done, and received your blessing, I intend forthwith to depart, without staying to see you play any foolish tricks; though I will affirm, I have beheld you perform so many, that she will desire to hear no more of the matter.'—'At least, Sancho,' said the knight, 'I would have thee, because there is a necessity for it, stay and see me strip, and perform a dozen or two of mad pranks, which I can easily finish in half an hour; for when thine eyes shall have been witnesses of some things I will act, thou mayest safely swear to what additions thou shalt make in thy report; and I assure thee, thou wilt not relate the half of what I intend to atchieve.'—'For the love of God, dear Sir!' cried Sancho, 'let me not see your worship naked; for it will give me so much uneasiness, that I shall not be able to refrain from weeping; and my head aches already with the sorrow I felt last night about Dapple;

ſo that I cannot bear to be ſet a mourning again; wherefore, if it be your worſhip's pleaſure that I ſhould ſee ſome of your mad actions, pray diſpatch them in your cloaths; and let them be ſuch as will ſtand you in moſt ſtead: for my own part, I think there is no occaſion for any ſuch thing; and if you diſpenſe with them, it will ſave time, and ſend me back the ſooner with ſuch news as your worſhip deſires and deſerves. For, if my Lady Dulcinea is not prepared to ſend a reaſonable anſwer, I ſolemnly proteſt, I will extract a favourable reply out of her maw, by kicking and cuffing. What! is it to be borne, that ſuch a renowned knight-errant as your worſhip, ſhould run mad without why or wherefore, on account of a —— I would not have her ladyſhip compel me to ſpeak; or, egad, I ſhall blab things by the dozen, even though they ſhould ſpoil the market. I am a rare fellow at that ſport. I find ſhe knows a little of my temper, otherwiſe i'faith! ſhe would take care to give me no offence.'—' In good faith, Sancho,' ſaid Don Quixote, ' thou ſeemeſt to be as mad as myſelf.'—' Not quite ſo mad,' replied the ſquire, ' but a little more cholerick; but enough of that. What eatables has your worſhip got to live upon till my return? will you go to the highroad, and rob the ſhepherds, like Cardenio?'—' Let not that give thee any concern,' anſwered the knight; ' though I had ſtore of proviſions by me, I ſhould eat nothing but the herbs and fruits which this meadow and theſe trees afford; the perfection of my deſign conſiſting in abſtaining from food, and in encountering other hardſhips.'—' Your worſhip muſt know,' ſaid Sancho, ' that I am afraid I ſhall not find my way back again to this concealed and unfrequented place, in which I leave your worſhip.'—' Take good notice of the marks,' anſwered the knight, ' and I ſhall endeavour to remain always near this very ſpot: nay, I will take care to aſcend the higheſt rocks hereabouts, that I may have a chance of deſcrying thee afar off, in thy return. But, the beſt ſcheme for preventing thy being

ing bewildered, will be, to cut down ſome of the furze that grows here in great plenty, and drop bunches of it, at ſmall diſtances on the way, until thou ſhalt reach the flat country: and they will ſerve as land-marks to guide thee hither on thy return, like the clue of Theſeus, in the labyrinth of Crete.'

'I will take your advice,' ſaid Sancho; who accordingly cutting a large bundle, begged his maſter's bleſſing, and took his leave, not without many tears on both ſides. Then mounting Rozinante, whom Don Quixote ſtrongly recommended to his care, commanding him to pay as much regard to the ſteed as he would ſhew for his own perſon; he ſet out for the plain, ſcattering, by the way, the furze he had cut, according to the direction of his maſter. In this manner then did he begin his journey, notwithſtanding the inceſſant importunities of Don Quixote, who ſolicited him to ſtay and ſee ſome of his extravagancies: but he had not travelled above an hundred yards, when he returned, ſaying, 'I confeſs your worſhip was in the right, when you obſerved, that, in order to my ſwearing with a ſafe conſcience that I have ſeen you perform mad pranks, it would be neceſſary for you to play ſome in my preſence; although, in my opinion, I have ſeen a pretty good ſample already in your ſtaying here by yourſelf.'—'Did not I tell thee ſo, Sancho?' ſaid Don Quixote: 'wait a little, and I will finiſh them in a twinkling.'—So ſaying, he ſtripped off his breeches in a great hurry, leaving his poſteriors covered by the tail of his ſhirt alone, and, without farther ceremony, cut a couple of capers, and a like number of tumbles, with his head down and his heels up, diſcloſing particulars, which ſhocked the modeſty of Sancho ſo much, that, in order to avoid the ſight of them a ſecond time, he turned Rozinante, fully ſatisfied and pleaſed, that he might now honeſtly ſwear he had left his maſter diſtracted. We will therefore let him purſue his journey, till his return, which was more ſpeedy than could be expected.

CHAPTER XII.

A Continuation of the Refinements in Love, practiſed by Don Quixote in the Brown Mountain.

BUT, to return to the account of what the Knight of the Rueful Countenance executed when he found himſelf alone. The hiſtory relates, that, having performed the capers and the tumbles, naked from the waiſt downward, and perceived that Sancho was gone, without waiting to ſee more of his extravagancies, he climbed to the top of a high rock, and there revolved what he had often reflected upon without coming to any concluſion; namely, whether it was better and more fit for his purpoſe, to imitate Orlando in his outrageous, or Amadis in his melancholy madneſs. 'It is not to be wondered at,' ſaid he within himſelf, 'if Orlando was ſuch a ſtout and valiant knight as he is repreſented; for he was actually inchanted, and invulnerable by every weapon but the point of a pin, thruſt into his foot, upon which he always wore a ſhoe with ſeven ſoles of iron: though that precaution did not avail him againſt Bernardo del Carpeio, who being informed of the contrivance, ſtrangled him in his arms at the battle of Roncevalles: but the circumſtance of his valour apart, let us conſider that of his loſing his ſenſes, which actually happened, when he found the tokens in the fountain, and received the information of the ſhepherd, by which he learned that Angelica had ſlept more than two afternoons with Modero, the little Moor with curled locks, who was Agramante's page; and, truly, if he was convinced in his own mind, that his miſtreſs had miſbehaved in that manner, it was no great feat to run mad upon the diſcovery. But why ſhould I imitate him in his madneſs, when the occaſion is not ſimilar? for my Dulcinea del Toboſo, I dare ſwear, never in all the days of her life beheld one Moor in his own likeneſs; and is this day as much a virgin as the mother that bore her; I ſhould therefore do her a manifeſt injury, in imagining otherwiſe, and adopting that kind of madneſs

which possessed Orlando Furioso. On the other hand, I am sensible that Amadis de Gaul, without losing his senses, or acting the madman, acquired as much, or more fame than he, in the character of a lover; for, according to the history, all that he did, when he found himself in disgrace with his mistress Oriana, who banished him from her presence during pleasure, was to retire, in company of a hermit, to the poor rock, where he contented himself with bemoaning his misfortune, until Heaven sent him succour, in the midst of his great necessity and affliction. If this circumstance, therefore, be true, as I know it is, why should I now take the trouble of stripping myself naked, or give umbrage to these trees, which have done me no harm? or what reason have I to defile the pure stream of these rivulets, which, when I want it, will yield me pleasant drink? Flourish, then, the memory of Amadis! and let him be imitated as much as possible, by Don Quixote de La Mancha, of whom may be said, that which is recorded of another*, "If he did not atchieve great things, at least he died in attempting." And, though I am not banished nor disdained by my Dulcinea, let it suffice, as I have already said, that I am absent from her. Come, then, let us begin: recur to my remembrance, ye feats of Amadis, and initiate me in the imitation of your fame. I know his chief exercise was prayer, and in that too will I follow his example.' So saying, he composed a rosary of the large galls of a cork tree, which he strung together instead of beads; but he found an unsurmountable difficulty in the want of an hermit to confess and console him: wherefore, he entertained himself in strolling about the meadow, writing and engraving verses on the barks of trees, and the smooth sand; all of them on the subject of his own melancholy, or in praise of his mistress Dulcinea; but, after he was found in this place, none, except the following, remained intelligible and entire.

YE

* Probably alluding to the epitaph of Phaeton.

Hic situs est Phaeton, currus auriga paterni,
Quem si non tenuit, magnis tamen excidit ausis.

I.

Ye trees and herbs, ſo green and tall,
  That ſhade this meadow, and adorn,
If you rejoice not at my thrall,
  Give ear unto a wretch forlorn;
Nor let my grief, though loud, invade
  Your peace; but, by Don Quixote, be a
Self-offer'd tax of ſorrow paid
  In abſence of his Dulcinea
                                        del Toboſo.

II.

Theſe are the rocks to which he's driven
  By her who ſeems not much to care for
The trueſt lover under heaven;
  And yet he knows not why nor wherefore.
By love toſs'd like a tennis-ball,
  A caſk of tears will not defray a
Whole day's expence of grief and gall,
  In abſence of his Dulcinea
                                        del Toboſo.

III.

Among theſe craggy rocks and brambles,
  He hangs, alas! on ſorrow's tenters;
Or curſes, as alone he rambles,
  The cruel cauſe of his miſventures.
Unpitying love about his ears,
  With ſcourge ſevere, began to play a
Moſt dreadful game, that made his tears
  Flow for his abſent Dulcinea
                                        del Toboſo.

Theſe verſes, with the addition of del Toboſo to the name of Dulcinea, afforded infinite diverſion to thoſe who found them: for they concluded Don Quixote had imagined, that, if he named her without this title, the ſtanza could not poſſibly be underſtood; and this was really the caſe, as he afterwards owned. Many other ditties did he compoſe; but, as we have already obſerved, none but theſe three ſtanzas could be decyphered and read. In this amuſement, in ſighing, invoking the

fauns

fauns and ſylvans of thoſe woods, the nymphs of the brooks, with the damp and doleful echo to hear, conſole, and reſound his complaints, and in culling plants to ſuſtain nature, he employed himſelf till the return of Sancho, who, had he ſtayed three weeks, inſtead of three days, the knight of the rueful countenance would have been ſo emaciated and disfigured, that he could not have been known by the mother who bore him.

However, it will not be amiſs to leave him, engroſſed by his ſighs and poetry, in order to recount what happened to Sancho Panza, in the execution of his embaſſy. Having reached the highway, this truſty meſſenger took the road to Toboſo, and next day arrived at the very inn where he had met with the diſgraceful adventure of the blanketting. He no ſooner perceived the unlucky houſe, than he fancied himſelf cutting capers in the air again: and was very lothe to enter, although it was then dinner time, and he was very much inſtigated by the deſire of taſting ſomething hot, as he had lived for many days paſt on cold victuals only. This inclination compelled him to ride cloſe up to the inn, where, while he was ſitting in ſuſpence, and heſitating whether or not he ſhould enter, two perſons happened to come to the door, and knowing him immediately, the one ſaid to the other, "Pray, Mr. Licentiate, is not that man on horſeback our neighbour Sancho Panza; who, as the houſekeeper told us, went out with our adventurer in quality of ſquire?"—'The very ſame,' anſwered the licentiate; 'and that is the individual horſe of our friend Don Quixote.' And no wonder they ſhould know him ſo eaſily; for they were no other than the curate and barber of the knight's town, by whom the ſcrutiny and trial of his books were held. Having therefore recognized Sancho Panza and Rozinante, and being impatient to hear news of Don Quixote, they ran up to the ſquire, and the curate called him by name, ſaying, 'Friend Sancho, where is your maſter!' Sancho, who recollected them alſo, reſolved to conceal the place and condition in which he had left his maſter; and therefore anſwered, that

that the knight was in a certain place, employed about a certain affair of the utmoſt importance, which he durſt not diſcloſe for the eyes that ſtood in his head. 'That pretence will not do, Sancho,' ſaid the barber; 'if you refuſe to tell where he is, we ſhall imagine, as indeed we do, that you have robbed and murdered him, and taken poſſeſſion of his horſe; ſo that in good ſooth, you muſt either produce him, or in this very ſpot, we will——' 'You have no occaſion,' cried Sancho, interrupting him, 'to threaten people in this manner; I am not the man to rob and murder any perſon; every man muſt fall by his own fortune, or by the will of God that created him: my maſter is ſound and ſafe, doing penance in the midſt of that mountain, to his heart's content.' He then, without pauſing, in a breath informed them of the condition in which he left him, recounted all the adventures which had happened to him, and told them of the letter he was carrying to my Lady Dulcinea del Toboſo, who was no other than Lorenzo Corchuelo's daughter, with whom his maſter was up to his ears in love.

They were aſtoniſhed at what the ſquire related; and, though well acquainted with the particular ſpecies of Don Quixote's madneſs, this inſtance afforded freſh admiration: they deſired Sancho to ſhew them the letter for the Lady Dulcinea del Toboſo; and he told them it was only a rough draught, written on the leaf of a pocket book; and that his maſter had ordered him to get it tranſcribed on a ſheet of paper, with the firſt convenient opportunity. The curate promiſed to tranſcribe it in a fair legible hand, and again deſired a ſight of it. Sancho put his hand into his boſom, in ſearch of the book, which, however, he could not find; and indeed, had he fumbled till this time, it would have been to no purpoſe; for he had left it with Don Quixote, who had forgot to give, as he to aſk it of him, before he ſet out. Sancho miſſing his charge, grew pale as death, and ſearching again his whole body with great eagerneſs, could find nothing; upon which, without more ado, he laid hold of his beard with both hands, and plucked one half of it

it

it from his chin; then, with vaſt diſpatch and precipitation, belaboured his face and noſe in ſuch a manner, as left the whole covered with blood. The curate and barber ſeeing him make ſo free with his own perſon, aſked what had happened to him, that made him handle himſelf ſo roughly. 'What has happened to me!' cried the ſquire, 'I have loſt and let ſlip through my fingers in an inſtant, three aſs colts, each of which was as tall as a tower.' 'By what means?' reſumed the barber. 'I have loſt,' anſwered Sancho, 'the pocket book, in which was written the letter for Dulcinea, together with an order, ſigned by my maſter's own hand, deſiring his niece to deliver to me three colts out of four or five which he has at home.' At the ſame time he told them how he had loſt Dapple. The curate comforted him, by ſaying, that when he returned, his maſter would renew the order, and give him a bill upon paper, as the cuſtom is, for thoſe written in pocket books are never accepted or paid.

With this aſſurance Sancho conſoled himſelf, obſerving, ſince that was the caſe, he ſhould not give himſelf much uneaſineſs about the loſs of the letter, which, as he retained it by art, he could cauſe to be tranſcribed where and when he pleaſed. The barber deſired him to repeat it, telling him they would tranſcribe it; upon which Sancho began to ſcratch his head, in order to recollect it, ſtanding ſometimes on one foot, ſometimes on the other. One while he fixed his eyes upon the ground, then lifted them up to Heaven: at laſt, after a moſt tedious pauſe, during which he gnawed off the half of one of his nails, and kept his hearers in the moſt impatient ſuſpenſe; 'Fore God, Mr. Licentiate,' ſaid he, 'I believe the devil has run away with every word that I remembered of this letter; though I am poſitive it began with ſubterrene and ſublime princeſs!' —'It could not be ſubterrene,' ſaid the barber, 'but ſuperterrene or ſovereign.'—'You are in the right,' reſumed Sancho; 'then, if my memory does not fail me, it went on with the ſmitten, the ſleep-leſs, and the ſore,

kiſſes

kiſſes your hands, moſt ungrateful and unregarded beauty; and ſomething or other of health and diſtemper which he wiſhed her; running on at this rate, till he concluded with, "yours, till death, the Knight of the Rueful Countenance."

The hearers were not a little diverted with this ſpecimen of Sancho's memory, which they applauded very much; deſiring him to repeat the letter again, twice over, that they might retain it, until they could have an opportunity of tranſcribing it. He accordingly renewed his efforts, repeated it three times; and as often recited three thouſand other abſurdities. He likewiſe gave them an account of every thing which had befallen his maſter; but mentioned not a ſyllable of the blanketting that had happened to himſelf in that very inn which he refuſed to enter; nay, he gave them to underſtand that his maſter, as ſoon as he could bring him a favourable diſpatch from my Lady Dulcinea del Toboſo, would put himſelf in the way of becoming an emperor or monarch at leaſt, according to the plan ſettled between them. This he repreſented as a very eaſy matter, conſidering the valour of his perſon, and ſtrength of his arm; and told them, that his deſign would be no ſooner accompliſhed, than the knight would beſtow upon him in marriage (for by that time, he muſt of neceſſity be a widower) one of the maids of honour to the empreſs; a fine young lady, and heireſs of a vaſt and wealthy eſtate upon the main land, without any oilands or iſlands, which he did not much care for.

Sancho uttered this piece of wrong-headed information with ſuch compoſure, wiping his noſe from time to time, that his townſmen could not help admiring anew the madneſs of Don Quixote; which, like a whirlpool, had ſucked in and ſwept along with it the underſtanding of this poor ſimpleton. They did not chuſe to fatigue themſelves with endeavours to convince him of his error; but, as they believed it was not prejudicial to his conſcience, reſolved, for their amuſement, to encourage him in his folly: with this view they adviſed him to

pray

pray to God for long life and health to his maſter; and obſerved, that it was a thing both likely and feaſible that he ſhould, in proceſs of time, become an emperor, at leaſt an archbiſhop, or attain ſome ſtation of equal dignity. To this encouragement Sancho replied, ‘ Gentlemen, if fortune ſhould bring matters about, ſo as that my maſter ſhould incline to be an archbiſhop rather than an emperor, I ſhould be glad to know what archbiſhops-errant beſtow upon their ſquires ?’ The curate told him, that they commonly gave him ſome ſimple benefice, curacy, or the office of ſacriſtan, with a good yearly income, beſides the fees of the altar, which are uſually reckoned at as much more. ‘ In order to fill an employment of that kind,’ anſwered Sancho, ‘ the ſquire muſt be unmarried, and at leaſt capable of aſſiſting at maſs ; and if that be the caſe, what will become of me, who have not only the misfortune to be married, but am alſo ignorant of the firſt letter of the A, B, C ; ſhould my maſter take it into his head to be an archbiſhop, rather than an emperor, according to the cuſtom of the knights-errant ?”—‘ Don't make yourſelf uneaſy about that matter, friend Sancho,’ ſaid the barber ; ‘ for we will entreat and adviſe your maſter, nay, even make it an affair of conſcience, for him to become an emperor rather than an archbiſhop, as a ſtation more ſuited to his diſpoſition, which is more warlike than ſtudious.’—‘ I was of the ſame opinion,’ reſumed Sancho ; ‘ but now, I'll venture to ſay, he has a capacity for every thing : and what I intend to do, is to beſeech our Lord to direct his choice to that ſtation which will be moſt for his own honour and my advantage.’—‘ You ſpeak like a ſenſible man,’ ſaid the curate ; ‘ and in ſo doing will act the part of a good Chriſtian ; but our preſent buſineſs is to think on ſome means of putting an end to this uſeleſs penance your maſter has impoſed upon himſelf ; and in the mean time go in to dinner.’ Sancho deſired them to enter, ſaying, he would wait for them at the door, and afterwards tell them why he did not go in, and wherefore it was not proper for him to

to do; but begged they would be ſo good as to bring out ſomething hot for himſelf, and ſome barley for Rozinante. They accordingly went in, and in a little time the barber brought him out a meſs of hot victuals. After they had both maturely deliberated about the means of accompliſhing their deſign, the curate fell upon a ſcheme extremely well adapted to the taſte of the knight, as well as to their purpoſe. He propoſed to clothe himſelf in the dreſs of a lady-errant, and that the barber ſhould diſguiſe himſelf, as well as he could, in the likeneſs of a ſquire; which being done, they ſhould go to the place where Don Quixote was, and the prieſt, on pretence of being a damſel in diſtreſs, ſhould beg a boon, which he, as a valiant knight-errant, could not help granting. This boon ſhould be a requeſt, that he would accompany her to a certain place whither ſhe would conduct him, there to redreſs an injury ſhe had received from a diſcourteous knight; and the boon ſhould be attended with an humble ſupplication, that he would not deſire her to take off her maſk, nor aſk any queſtion about her affairs, until he ſhould have done her juſtice upon her adverſary. And as he firmly believed that Don Quixote would comply with any requeſt made in that ſtile, he hoped, by theſe means, to withdraw him from the mountain, and conduct him to his own habitation, where they would endeavour to find ſome remedy for his ſtrange diſorder.

CHAP XIII.

How the Curate and Barber ſet out on the Execution of their Plan; with other Events worthy to be recorded in this ſublime Hiſtory.

THIS ſcheme of the curate was ſo well reliſhed by the barber, that they began to put it in execution immediately; by borrowing of the landlady a petticoat and tucker, for which the prieſt left a new caſſock in pawn; while the barber made an artificial beard of the tail of a pied ox, in which the innkeeper uſed to ſtick his comb. When the hoſteſs aſked what occaſion they had

had for these things, the curate gave her a brief account of Don Quixote's madness, and explained the use to which they intended to put the disguise, in order to disengage him from the mountain where he then was. The innkeeper and his wife immediately discovered that this lunatick was no other than their quondam guest, who was author of the balsam, and master of the blanketted squire; and recounted to the curate every thing that had happened, not even forgetting the circumstance which Sancho was at such pains to conceal. In short, the landlady dressed up the curate in a most curious manner; she put upon him a cloth petticoat flounced and furbelowed, with a broad border of black velvet, and a close jerkin of green velvet, garnished with robings of white sattin, which, together with the petticoat, seemed to have been made in the reign of King Bamba*; he would not suffer himself to be coifed, but covered his head with a quilted linen night-cap, which he always carried about with him; and bound his forehead with a garter of black taffety, making a sort of mask with the other, which effectually concealed his countenance and beard. Over all, he flapped his beaver, which was so broad that it might have served for an umbrella; and, wrapping himself up in his cloak, mounted his mule, sitting sideways like a woman; while the barber bestrid his own beast, with his beard flowing down to his girdle, of a white and red colour, being made, as we have before observed, of a pied ox's tail.

Thus equipped, they took leave of every body present, even the kind Maritornes, who promised, though a sinner, to mumble a whole rosary over in prayers to God, for the good success of that arduous and Christian design

* Bamba, or Wamba, king of the Visigoths in Spain, mounted the throne in the year 672, and was famous for his success against the Arabians, as well as for his attachment to the Christian religion, as a proof of which he retired into a monastery, and resigned the kingdom to Ervige.

deſign they had undertaken; but ſcarce had they ſallied from the inn, when the curate began to think he was to blame for diſguiſing himſelf; it being, in his opinion, indecent for a prieſt to appear in ſuch a manner, how much ſoever depended upon their ſucceſs. He therefore propoſed that he ſhould exchange characters with the barber, who might act the part of the damſel in diſtreſs, while he took that of the ſquire, which he thought did not ſo much profane the dignity of the cloth; and unleſs his neighbour would agree to this propoſal, he aſſured him he was reſolved to go no farther, even if the devil himſelf ſhould carry off Don Quixote. At that inſtant Sancho chanced to come up, and ſeeing them in ſuch a garb could not refrain from laughing: in ſhort, the barber aſſented to every thing the other propoſed; and the plan being thus altered, the curate began to inſtruct him touching his behaviour and ſpeech to Don Quixote, in order to move and induce him to accompany them, and quit that place he had choſen for the ſcene of his vain and extravagant penance. The barber told him, that, without his leſſons, he knew very well how to demean himſelf in the character; and as he did not chuſe to put on the dreſs till they ſhould be near Don Quixote, he folded it up with great care; the prieſt adjuſted his beard; and both together proceeded on their journey, under the direction of Sancho Panza, who by the way related to them what happened between his maſter and the madman whom they met with in the Brown Mountain; concealing, nevertheleſs, the circumſtance of the portmanteau, and it's contents; for, notwithſtanding his ſimplicity, our youth was as covetous as wiſer people.

Next day they came to the broom boughs, which Sancho had ſtrewed, in order to aſcertain the place where he had left his maſter: he no ſooner, therefore, perceived his marks, than he told them that was the entrance into the mountain; and deſired them to put on their dreſſes, if they were neceſſary towards the deliverance of his maſter: for they had already aſſured him, that

that their travelling in ſuch diſguiſe was of the utmoſt importance, in diſengaging the knight from that diſagreeable courſe of life he had choſen: and they charged him not to tell his maſter that he knew who they were; and if he ſhould aſk, as doubtleſs he would, whether or not he had delivered the letter to Dulcinea, they adviſed him to anſwer in the affirmative, and tell him, that as ſhe could not read it, ſhe had ſent her anſwer by word of mouth, commanding him, on pain of her diſpleaſure, to appear in her preſence, with all convenient ſpeed, on an affair of the utmoſt conſequence to him: for, with this anſwer, and other ſpeeches they intended to make, they did not at all doubt of reconciling him to a better way of life, and prevail upon him immediately to begin his career towards being an emperor or king; and as to the office of archbiſhop, Sancho had nothing to fear. The ſquire liſtened to theſe directions, which he carefully depoſited in his memory, thanking them heartily for their intention to adviſe his maſter to accept of an emperor's crown, rather than an archbiſhop's mitre; as he was very ſenſible that emperors could do more for ſquires than archbiſhops-errant. He alſo propoſed to go before, in ſearch of his maſter, and impart to him this anſwer of his lady, which, he aſſured them, would be ſufficient to bring him out of the mountain, without their being put to any farther trouble. They approved of his opinion, and reſolved to ſtay where they were until he ſhould return with the news of his having found Don Quixote: accordingly, Sancho proceeded towards the heart of the mountain, leaving them in a ſpot watered by a ſmall purling brook, and ſhaded in a moſt cool and agreeable manner by ſome rocks and trees that grew round it.

It being then the month of Auguſt, when the heat in thoſe parts is exceſſive, and three in the afternoon, which is the hotteſt time of the day, they were the more charmed with the ſituation, which was ſo inviting, that they choſe it for the place of their reſidence until Sancho ſhould return. While they lay at their eaſe,

under the cover of this ſhade, their ears were ſaluted with the ſound of a voice, which, though unaccompanied by any inſtrument, ſung ſo ſweet and melodiouſly, that they were ſtruck with aſtoniſhment; little expecting to meet with ſuch a delicious warbler in that unfrequented place; for though it is uſually ſaid, that the woods and mountains abound with ſhepherds, who ſing moſt inchantingly, that report is rather the fiction of poets than the voice of truth: beſides, the verſes which they heard were not compoſed in the ruſtick phraſe of clowns, but in a polite and courtly ſtrain; as may be perceived by the ſong itſelf, which follows:

I.

Ah! what inſpires my woeful ſtrain?
Unkind diſdain!
Ah! what augments my miſery?
Fell jealouſy!
Or ſay, what hath my patience worn?
An abſent lover's ſcorn!
The torments, then, that I endure,
No mortal remedy can cure:
For every languid hope is ſlain,
By abſence, jealouſy, diſdain!

II.

From Love, my unrelenting foe,
Theſe ſorrows flow!
My infant glory's overthrown,
By Fortune's frown!
Confirm'd in this my wretched ſtate,
By the decrees of Fate,
In Death alone I hope releaſe
From this compounded, dire diſeaſe;
Whoſe cruel pangs to aggravate,
Fortune and Love conſpire with Fate!

III.

Ah! what will mitigate my doom?
The ſilent tomb!
Ah! what retrieve departed joy?
Inconſtancy!

Or

Or ſay, can aught but frenzy bear
This tempeſt of deſpair?
All other efforts, then, are vain,
To cure this ſoul-tormenting pain,
That owns no other remedy
Than madneſs, death, inconſtancy.

The hour, the ſeaſon, and the ſolitude, conſpired with the agreeable voice of the ſinger, to increaſe the wonder and ſatisfaction of the hearers, who liſtened for ſome time in expectation of ſomething elſe; but the ſilence having continued a good while, they reſolved to go in queſt of the perſon who ſung ſo enchantingly, and were juſt going to ſet out on this deſign, when they were arreſted by the ſame voice, which again ſaluted their ears with this other ſong:

I.

O ſacred Friendſhip! mild and gay,
Who to the regions of the bleſs'd
Hath ſoar'd, and left mankind a prey
To fraud, in thy reſemblance dreſs'd,

II.

Auſpicious hear, and hither ſend
Thy ſiſter Truth, with radiant eyes,
To brand the falſe profeſſing friend,
Detected in the fair diſguiſe.

III.

Or come thyſelf, and re-inſpire
The purpoſe candid and humane;
Elſe Peace and Order will retire,
While Horror and Confuſion reign.

This ſonnet was concluded with a moſt profound ſigh, and the curate and barber began again to liſten for more; but, finding the muſick converted into mournful ſobs and interjections, they were determined to know who this melancholy perſon was, who ſung ſo well, and groaned ſo piteouſly. They had not gone many paces with this intent, when turning the point of a rock, they perceived a man of the ſame make and appearance that Sancho deſcribed, when he related the ſtory of Cardenio: he

he did not ſeem ſurprized at the ſight of them, but ſtood with his head reclining upon his breaſt, in a very penſive poſture, without lifting his eyes to look at them, after their firſt ſudden appearance. The curate, who was a well-ſpoken man, concluding, from the deſcription, that this muſt be he whoſe misfortune he had been apprized of, went up, and, in a ſhort but pathetick addreſs, exhorted and entreated him to quit that miſerable courſe of life, which was the greateſt of all misfortunes, and altogether perverted the end of his being. Cardenio being at that time in one of his lucid intervals, entirely free of that frantick paroxiſm which uſed ſo utterly to deprive him of his ſenſes, and ſeeing two people ſo differently dreſſed from thoſe he commonly met with in that ſolitude, could not help being ſomewhat ſurprized; eſpecially, when he heard him talk of his misfortune as a circumſtance with which they were well acquainted; for the curate had mentioned it in the courſe of his expoſtulation; and therefore he anſwered in this manner: ‘ I plainly perceive, gentlemen, that Heaven, which is careful in ſuccouring the good, and ſometimes even the bad, hath ſent, though I little deſerve ſuch favour and condeſcenſion, divers people into this unfrequented ſolitude, ſo remote from all commerce and ſociety, in order to convince me, by juſt and various arguments, how unreaſonably I act in leading this kind of life, which they have endeavoured to make me exchange for a better; and, as they know not the reaſons I have to think that, in quitting this ſituation, I ſhall be plunged into a worſe, they have perhaps looked upon me as a perſon of very ſhallow underſtanding, or, which is ſtill a conjecture more unfavourable, a downright madman: and truly, it is not to be wondered at, if that was really the caſe; for I can eaſily conceive, that my misfortunes operate ſo intenſely upon my imagination, and impair my faculties ſo much, that ſometimes, in ſpite of all my endeavours to the contrary, I become, like that rock, void of all ſentiment and knowledge; and am convinced of my infirmity too late, when people

ſhew

shew me the marks of what I have done, while I was under the influence of that terrible transport: then, all that I can do, is to bewail my distemper; curse my lot in vain; and, in excuse of my madness, relate my sufferings to all who express the least desire of hearing them; that those of sounder judgment, knowing the cause, may not wonder at the effects; and if they cannot prevent, at least pardon my frenzy; converting their indignation at my extravagance into compassion for my woes; and if you, gentlemen, are come with that intention, which hath brought others to this place, before you proceed with your prudent admonitions, I entreat you to hear the detail of my misfortunes, which you do not yet know, and then, perhaps, you will save yourselves the trouble which you might otherwise take in consoling an affliction that admits of no consolation.'

The two friends, who desired nothing else than to hear from his own mouth the cause of his misfortune, earnestly begged he would recount it, and promised to attempt nothing contrary to his own inclination in the way of remedy or comfort. Thus assured, the melancholy gentleman began his distressful story, nearly in the same words and circumstances which he had used a few days before, to Don Quixote and the goatherd, when he was interrupted in the affair of Mr. Elisabat, by the knight's punctuality in asserting the decorum of chivalry, as the particulars of that quarrel have been already related: but now he remained fortunately free from his paroxism, and, of consequence, had time to finish the narration, which was imperfect before. When he therefore came to the circumstances of the letter which Don Fernando had found between the leaves of Amadis de Gaul*, he said he remembered the contents, and accordingly repeated them in these terms.

* There is no such letter mentioned in his conversation with Don Quixote.

"Lucinda

"Lucinda to Cardenio.

"I every day diſcover new qualities in Cardenio, which oblige and compel me to eſteem him the more. If you are inclined to extricate me out of all ſuſpence, you may effectuate your purpoſe without the leaſt prejudice to my honour; for my father, who is well acquainted with your virtues, loves me dearly, and, far from tyrannizing over my affections, will cheerfully grant that which is ſo juſtly your due, if your paſſion is ſuch as I wiſh and believe it to be."

'I reſolved, as I have already told you, to demand Lucinda in marriage, upon the receipt of this letter, which not only confirmed Don Fernando's high opinion of her prudence and virtue, but alſo inflamed him with the deſire of ruining my hopes before I ſhould be able to bring them to maturity. I told this faithleſs friend, Lucinda's father expected that mine ſhould propoſe the match; and that I durſt not communicate my deſire to him, leſt he ſhould refuſe to comply with it: not that he was ignorant of Lucinda's rank, virtue, beauty, and qualifications, which were ſufficient to ennoble any other family in Spain; but, becauſe I underſtood he was averſe to my being married, until he ſhould ſee what Duke Ricardo would do in my behalf: in ſhort, I told him that I would not venture to propoſe it, being afraid not only of this ill conſequence, but alſo of many others which I could not foreſee; although I had a ſtrong impreſſion upon my mind, that my wiſhes would never be completed. In anſwer to this declaration, Don Fernando undertook to manage the affair, and prevail upon my father to propoſe the match to Lucinda's parents.——O villain! more ambitious than Marius, more cruel than Catiline, more ſavage than Sylla, more fraudulent than Galalon, more treacherous than Vellido*, more vengeful than Julian, and more

* Who murdered Sancho I. king of Caſtile, while he was engaged in the ſiege of Zamora.

more covetous than Judas! Cruel, falſe, vindictive traitor! what injuries hadſt thou ſuffered from this poor credulous wretch, who with ſuch confidence diſcloſed to thee the moſt ſecret receſſes of his ſoul?—What offence had he given? what words had he uttered, or what advice had he offered, that did not directly tend to thy honour and advantage?——But, unhappy that I am! wherefore ſhould I complain? ſeeing it is a thing certain, that when once the tide of misfortune, heaped up by one's malignant ſtars, begins to deſcend with violence and fury, no earthly mound can oppoſe, nor human induſtry divert, it's courſe. Who could imagine that ſuch an illuſtrious, accompliſhed a young gentleman, as Don Fernando, who lay under obligations for the ſervices I had done him, and was powerful enough to obtain the gratification of his wiſh, whitherſoever his amorous inclination pointed, ſhould plague himſelf, as I may ſay, in attempts to rob me of my ſingle lamb, even before I had poſſeſſed it?

'But, let us lay aſide theſe vain and unprofitable reflections, and rejoin the broken thread of my unfortunate ſtory. Well, then, Don Fernando, perceiving that my preſence would be an obſtruction to the execution of his falſe and perfidious deſign, reſolved to ſend me back to his elder brother, on pretence of getting money to pay for ſix horſes, which he purpoſely bought that very day he undertook to ſpeak to my father, in order to have an excuſe for ſending me away, that he might, in my abſence, the more eaſily ſucceed in his villainous intention. Was it poſſible for me to prevent this treachery, or indeed conceive his deſign! No, ſurely. On the contrary, I offered, with the utmoſt alacrity, to ſet out forthwith, ſo pleaſed was I with the purchaſe he had made. That very night I had a private converſation with Lucinda, in which I told her the ſcheme I had concerted with Don Fernando, and bade her reſt aſſured in the hope that our juſt and honourable deſires would ſoon be gratified. She, as little ſuſpicious of Don Fernando's perfidy as I was, entreated

treated me to return with ſpeed, believing that our wiſhes would be completed as ſoon as my father ſhould mention the affair to her's. I don't know upon what account, her eyes were filled with tears when ſhe pronounced theſe words; and ſomething that ſeemed to ſwell in her throat, prevented her from uttering another ſyllable, though ſhe looked as if ſhe had ſomething more to ſay. I was confounded at this new circumſtance, which had never happened before: in all our former converſations, which my good fortune offered, or my diligence effected, there had been nothing but joy and ſatisfaction, without any mixture of tears, ſighs, jealouſy, dread, or ſuſpicion; all my diſcourſe uſed to conſiſt of acknowledgments to Heaven, for having beſtowed upon me ſuch a miſtreſs, whoſe beauty I extolled, and whoſe virtue and good ſenſe I admired; while ſhe returned the compliment, by praiſing thoſe qualities in me, which ſhe, in the partiality of her fondneſs, deemed worthy of applauſe; beſides, we uſed to entertain each other with an account of a thouſand trifling accidents that happened among our neighbours and acquaintance: and the heighth of my vivacity never amounted to more than the ſeizing of one of her delicate white hands, and preſſing it to my lips, thro' the narrow diſtance betwixt the rails that divided us. But, on that night which preceded the fatal day of my departure, ſhe wept, ſighed, and ſobbed, and left me filled with confuſion and ſurpriſe, and terrified at ſuch unuſual and melancholy marks of grief and affliction in my Lucinda. But I was flattered by my hopes, which aſcribed the whole to the ſtrength of her paſſion, and that ſorrow which is commonly produced by the abſence of a beloved object. In fine, I ſet out, penſive and ſad, my imagination tortured with ſuſpicions and doubts, which my reflection could neither digeſt nor explain: a ſure preſage of the melancholy fate that awaited me.

'I arrived at the place of my deſtination, and delivered my letters to Don Fernando's brother, who received

ceived me kindly; but, far from difpatching me immediately, defired me, to my infinite regret, to wait eight whole days in a place where his father fhould not fee me, becaufe his brother had writ to him to fend the money without the knowledge of the duke. But this was altogether an invention of the falfe Fernando, whofe brother had money enough, and could have fent me back the very fame day on which I arrived. This was fuch an order as I was fcarce able to obey, for I thought it impoffible to fupport life for fo many days in the abfence of Lucinda, confidering the forrow in which I had left her. Yet, notwithftanding, I refolved to do my duty like a faithful fervant, though I very well forefaw that my obedience muft be at the expence of my peace. Four days of the eight were not yet elapfed, when a man came in fearch of me, and gave me a letter, the fuperfcription of which I no fooner beheld, than I knew it to be written by Lucinda's own hand. I opened it with fear and trembling, believing that there muft be fomething very extraordinary in the cafe, which induced her to write to me in my abfence; confidering that while I was prefent, fhe had been fo fparing of her pen*. But, before I had read a fyllable, I afked the meffenger, who had put it into his hands, and how long he had been upon his journey? He anfwered, that paffing through a certain ftreet, about noon, he was ftopped by a very beautiful young lady, who called to him from a window, faying, with great earneftnefs, while the tears trickled from her

* The original *pues prefente pocas vezes lo hazîa*, fignifies, 'Since while I was prefent fhe did it very feldom.' This at firft fight appears a folecifm, and the petulant critic will exclaim, 'What occafion had fhe to write to her lover who was prefent, unlefs fhe had loft the faculty of fpeech!' But the feeming adfurdity will vanifh, when we reflect that by *prefent*, he means, in the fame city with his miftrefs; to whom, however, according to the cuftom of Spain, he had little or no accefs but by a literary correfpondence.

her eyes, "Brother, if you are a Chriſtian, as you ſeem to be, I entreat you, for God's ſake, to carry this letter to the place and perſon for whom it is directed; they are both well known; and in ſo doing, you will render a piece of ſervice acceptable to the Lord. That you may not want conveniences upon the road, here is ſomething to defray the expence of your journey.——So ſaying, ſhe threw down a handkerchief, in which were tied a hundred rials, this gold ring, and the letter I have delivered. Then, without waiting for a reply, ſhe went from the window, after having ſeen me take up the handkerchief and the letter, and made ſigns that I would do as ſhe deſired. Accordingly, finding myſelf ſo well paid for the trouble I ſhould be at, and ſeeing, by the direction, that you was the perſon to whom it was ſent, (and I know you perfectly well;) induced, moreover, by the tears of that beautiful young lady, I reſolved to truſt no other meſſenger, but come and deliver it with my own hand; and in ſixteen hours, which are paſt ſince I received it, I have travelled to this place, which, as you know, is about eighteen leagues from our town." 'While I liſtened attentively to the information of this grateful and extraordinary courier, my legs ſhook under me in ſuch a manner, that I could ſcarce ſtand upright. At length, however, I ventured to read the letter, which contained theſe words.

"THE promiſe which Don Fernando made, to prevail upon your father to propoſe a match to mine, hath been performed more to his inclination than your advantage. Know, Cardenio, that your pretended friend aſked me in marriage for himſelf; and my father, ſwayed by the advantage which he thinks Don Fernando has over you in point of fortune, hath given his conſent ſo much in earneſt, that two days hence the nuptials are to be celebrated ſo privately, that none but Heaven, and ſome people in the family, are to be preſent at the marriage. My ſituation you may gueſs. If it be in your power,

power, return with all ſpeed, and the event of this affair will ſhew whether I love you tenderly or not. Heaven grant that this may come to your hand before mine ſhall be preſented to him who ſo ill performs the duty of a friend!"

'This, which was the ſum of what the letter contained, made me ſet out immediately, without waiting for any anſwer, or the money for which I had come. For, by that time, I plainly perceived that it was not the purchaſe of the horſes, but his own treacherous intention, which had induced Don Fernando to ſend me out of the way. The indignation I conceived againſt him, together with the fear of loſing the jewel which I had acquired, and treaſured up with ſuch unwearied ſervices and care, added wings to my ſpeed, and conveyed me to the place of my habitation, juſt at the hour and minute proper for my going to viſit Lucinda. I entered the town privately, and leaving my mule at the houſe of the honeſt man who brought the letter, I went to the rail, which was the conſtant witneſs of our love, and there was ſo far favoured by fortune as to find Lucinda.—We knew each other preſently; though not as we ought to have known each other. But, who is he who can arrogate praiſe to himſelf, for having fathomed and diſcerned the capricious ſentiments and ſickly diſpoſition of woman? Surely no man on earth.—But this apart. Lucinda perceiving me, "Cardenio," ſaid ſhe, "I am now in my bridal dreſs, and this moment expected in the hall by the traitor Don Fernando, my covetous father, and ſome other people, who ſhall bear witneſs to my death ſooner than to my marriage. Be not confounded, my friend, but endeavour to be preſent at the ſacrifice, which, if I cannot prevent by my declaration, I wear a dagger concealed, which can obſtruct a more vigorous determination; and, by putting an end to my life, begin to convince thee of the ſincere paſſion I have always entertained, and ſtill retain, for my Cardenio." Afraid I ſhould want time to anſwer her, I replied

I replied with great hurry and confuſion, " Let your words be verified by your deeds, Madam. If you have a dagger to aſſert your love, I wear a ſword to defend it; or, ſhould fortune prove our foe, to rid myſelf of life." I believe ſhe did not hear all that I ſaid, becauſe ſhe was called away in a hurry to the bridegroom, who waited for her.

'Thus deepened the night of my diſtreſs; thus ſet the ſun of my happineſs! I remained without light to my eyes, or reflection to my mind, for ſome time; I could neither reſolve to enter her father's houſe, nor remove to any other place; at length, however, conſidering of what conſequence my preſence might be, in caſe any thing extraordinary ſhould happen, I recollected myſelf, as well as I could, and went in, without being perceived, as I was well acquainted with all the paſſages and corners of the houſe, and was favoured by the confuſion which then prevailed in it on account of the nuptials. Thus entering, unſeen, I found means to conceal myſelf in the hollow of a window in the hall, that was covered by the meeting of two pieces of tapeſtry, from behind which I could, without being perceived, obſerve every thing that happened.

'How ſhall I deſcribe the throbbings and palpitations of my heart, the images that occurred to my fancy, the reflections that I made while I remained in that ſituation! they were ſuch as I neither can nor ought to deſcribe. Let it ſuffice to ſay, the bridegroom came into the hall, without any other ornaments than his uſual dreſs, attended by a firſt couſin of Lucinda, in quality of brideſman, no other perſon being preſent, except ſome ſervants of the family. A little while after Lucinda came in from her cloſet, accompanied by her mother and two waiting-women; and as richly dreſſed and adorned as her rank and beauty deſerved, or as the perfection of gaiety and gallantry could invent. The ſuſpence and tranſport of my ſoul would not allow me to obſerve and mark the particulars of her dreſs; I could only take notice of the colours, which were carnation

and

and white; and the blaze of jewels that adorned her, which was even excelled by the singular beauty of her golden locks, that struck the eye with more splendor than all the precious stones, together with the light of four torches that burned in the hall.—O memory! thou mortal enemy of my repose! to what purpose dost thou now represent to my fancy the unparalleled beauty of that adorable foe? Cruel remembrance! rather recall to my view the particulars of what then happened, that, incensed by such a manifest injury, I may take vengeance, if not upon her, at least upon my own life. But you, gentlemen, must be tired with these digressions; though my misfortune is such as neither can, nor ought to be superficially or succinctly related; because every circumstance, in my opinion, requires a full discussion.' The curate answered, that, far from being tired, they were very much entertained by those minute particulars, which he thought deserved as much attention as the principal events of the story.

'I say, then,' resumed Cardenio, 'that the parties being assembled in the hall, the curate of the parish entered, and taking them both by the hands, in order to perform his function, he said, "Madam Lucinda, are you willing to take Don Fernando here present for your lawful spouse, as holy mother church ordains?" At this question, I thrust out my whole head and neck from behind the tapestry, and, with the utmost attention and disorder of soul, listened to Lucinda's answer, which I expected, as either the sentence of my death or confirmation of my life.—O that I had boldly advanced, and called aloud, "Ah Lucinda! Lucinda! take care what you do; reflect upon your duty to me; remember you are mine, and can never belong to any other husband. Consider, that my life must end the moment you answer yes.—Ha! treacherous Don Fernando! robber of my glory! death of my life! what are thy intentions! What wouldst thou have! remember that, as a Christian, thou canst not fulfil thy desires; for I am Lucinda's husband, and she is my lawful wife!"—Fool that I am! now, when

when I am abſent, and far removed from the danger, I can reflect upon what I ought to have done. Now that I am robbed of all that was dear to my ſoul! accurſed be the robber, on whom I might have taken vengeance, had my heart ſupplied me with courage, as it now affords inclination to complain. In fine, as I then acted like a booby and a coward, it is but reaſonable that I ſhould now die of madneſs, ſorrow, and ſhame. The prieſt waited for the reply of Lucinda, who declined it a good while; and when I expected ſhe would either unſheath her dagger to vindicate her love, employ her tongue in the cauſe of truth, or utter ſome ingenious fraud that ſhould tend to my advantage, I heard her pronounce with a weak and faultering voice, "Yes, I will." Don Fernando repeated the ſame words, and the ring being put upon her finger, they were united in the indiſſoluble bond of marriage; then he embraced his new-married ſpouſe, who laying her hand on her heart, fainted away in the arms of her mother. It now remains to deſcribe my own ſituation, when I heard and ſaw my hopes thus baffled by Lucinda's breach of promiſe; and found myſelf rendered incapable of ever retrieving the happineſs I had that inſtant loſt. I remained without ſenſe or reflection, abandoned, as I thought, by Heaven, and a declared enemy to that earth on which I lived. The air refuſed breath for my ſighs, the water denied moiſture for my tears; fire alone increaſed within me, in ſuch a degree, that I was ſcorched with jealouſy and rage! Lucinda's ſwooning threw the whole company into confuſion; and her mother opening her breaſt to give her air, found in it a folded paper, which Don Fernando taking, read by the light of one of the torches, and then ſat down in a chair, and leaned one ſide of his head upon his hand, in a penſive attitude, without minding the remedies they were applying for the recovery of his ſpouſe.

'I, ſeeing the whole family in confuſion, ventured to come out, coſt what it would; reſolving, ſhould I be ſeen, to do ſome deſperate action, that would convince the

the whole world of my juſt indignation, in chaſtiſing the falſe Don Fernando, and the fickle fainting traitreſs. But fate, that reſerved me, if poſſible, for greater misfortunes, ordained that I ſhould then abound in reflection, which hath ſince failed me; and reſolve, rather than take vengeance upon my greateſt enemies, who, as they had no ſuſpicion of me, were then at my mercy, to turn upon myſelf that reſentment which they ſo juſtly deſerved to feel; and, perhaps, with more rigour than I ſhould have exerciſed upon them, had I at that time ſacrificed them to my rage, becauſe ſudden death is infinitely more eaſy than that which is lengthened out by lingering torments. In ſhort, I quitted the houſe, and went to the place where I had left my mule, which being ſaddled, I mounted her, and, without taking leave of my hoſt, ſallied out of town, dreading, like another Lot, to look behind me. When I found myſelf alone in the open field, ſhrouded by the darkneſs of the night, and invited by the ſilence to complain, without caution or fear of being overheard or known, I raiſed my voice, and gave a looſe to my indignation, in venting curſes upon Lucinda and Don Fernando, as if thoſe vain exclamations could have atoned for the injury they had done me. I beſtowed upon her the epithets of cruel, falſe, perfidious, and ungrateful; but, above all, avaricious; ſince the wealth of my rival had ſhut the eyes of her love, detached her from me, and ſwayed her inclination towards him to whom fortune had ſhewn herſelf more kind and liberal. Yet, in the midſt of theſe reproaches and invectives, I could not help excuſing her, obſerving, it was no wonder, that a damſel, educated under reſtraint, in the houſe of her parents, bred up, and always accuſtomed to obey them, ſhould comply with their will and pleaſure, in marrying a young gentleman of ſuch wealth, rank, and qualifications, that her refuſal might have been thought to proceed either from want of ſenſe, or a paſſion for ſome other man, which would have been a ſuſpicion equally prejudicial to her virtue and reputation: then I argued on the other ſide

side of the question; saying, had she owned that I was her husband, her parents would have seen she had not committed an unpardonable crime in making such a choice; since, before the offer of Don Fernando, they themselves could not have desired, had their desires been bounded by reason, a better match than me for their daughter; and consequently, before she complied with that compulsive injunction of giving her hand to another, she might have told them, that she had already given it to me; in which case, I would have appeared, and confirmed the truth of every thing she should have feigned for the occasion; in fine, I concluded, that superficial love, slender understanding, vast ambition, and thirst after grandeur, had obliterated in her memory those professions by which I had been deceived, cherished, and supported, in the unshaken hope of my honourable desires.

'In this exclamation and anxiety I travelled all night; and in the morning found myself in one of the passages to this mountain, in which I proceeded three days more, without high-road or bye-path, till I stopped at a small meadow, that lies either on the right or left of these rocks; there I enquired of some goatherds whereabouts the most craggy part of the mountain was; and, according to their directions, thither I rode, resolving to put an end to my life. When I arrived among these ragged rocks, my mule fell down dead of weariness and hunger; or, as I rather believe, to disencumber herself of such a useless load as then burdened her; and I remained on foot, quite spent and famished, without having or desiring any support. In this situation, I know not how long I continued stretched upon the ground: but, at length, I got up without feeling any cravings of hunger, and found myself in the midst of some shepherds, who, doubtless, had relieved my necessity. Indeed, they told me in what condition I had been found, uttering such incoherent and extravagant expressions, as clearly demonstrated that I had lost my senses. Since that time, I have frequently perceived my intellects

intellects so crazy and unsound, that I perform a thousand mad actions, tearing my cloaths, bellowing thro' these unfrequented places, cursing my fate, and repeating in vain the beloved name of my fair enemy, without any connected sentences, or indeed any other intent than that of putting an end to my life by violent outcries; and when I recover the use of my senses, I find myself so weak and exhausted, that I scarce can move. My usual habitation is the hollow of a cork tree, large enough to contain this miserable carcase; the cow and goatherds, who frequent these mountains, maintain me out of charity, by leaving food upon the road, or rocks, on which they think I may chance to find it; and, even while I am deprived of my understanding, natural instinct teaches me to distinguish this necessary nourishment, awakening my appetite and desire of seizing it for my use. They tell me, too, when they meet with me in one of my lucid intervals, that at other times I sally out by the highway, and take it by force from the shepherds, as they are bringing it from their cots, although they offer it of their own accord. In this manner I lead my woeful and wretched life, until Heaven shall be pleased to put a period to it, or give me grace to forget the beauty and falshood of Lucinda, together with the wrong I have suffered from Don Fernando. If this shall happen before I die, my intellects will return into their right channel; otherwise there is nothing to be done, but to supplicate Heaven to have mercy on my soul; for I find I have neither virtue nor strength to extricate myself out of this extremity, into which I was voluntarily plunged.

'This, gentlemen, is the bitter story of my misfortune; tell me, if you think it could have been rehearsed with less concern than I have shewn; and pray give yourselves no trouble in offering to me such persuasions and advice, as your reason prompts you to think will do me service; for they can have no other effect upon me, than the prescription of a celebrated physician upon a patient who will not receive it. I will have no health

without

without Lucinda; and ſince ſhe who is, or ought to be, mine, hath attached herſelf to another, I, who might have been the child of happineſs, am now the willing votary of woe. She, by her inconſtancy, wants to fix my perdition; and I welcome it, in order to gratify her deſire, and be an example to poſterity, of one who wanted that conſolation which almoſt all the wretched uſe! namely, the impoſſibility of receiving comfort; a conſideration that increaſes my miſery, which, I fear, will not end even with death.

Thus did Cardenio wind up the long thread of his amorous and unfortunate ſtory; and juſt as the curate was about to give him his beſt advice and conſolation, he was prevented by a voice that ſaluted his ears, and in mournful accents pronounced what will be rehearſed in the fourth book of this narration; for, in this place, the third is concluded by the ſage and attentive hiſtorian Cid Hamet Benengeli.

PART I. BOOK IV.

CHAPTER I.

Of the new and agreeable Adventure that happened to the Curate and Barber in the Brown Mountain.

THRICE happy and fortunate was that age which produced the moſt auſpicious knight Don Quixote de la Mancha, in conſequence of whoſe honourable reſolution to reſtore and revive the loſt, and, as it were, buried, order of knight-errantry, we of theſe times, barren and unfruitful of ſprightly amuſements, enjoy the agreeable entertainment, not only of his own true and delightful adventures, but alſo the intervening epiſodes, which are no leſs real, artful, and delicious, than the main hiſtory itſelf, the twiſted, reeled, and revelled thread of which is continued thus!

Juſt

Juſt as the curate was ready to offer ſome conſolation to Cardenio, he was prevented by a voice that ſaluted his ears in theſe mournful accents: 'Would to God I could find a place to ſerve as a private tomb for this wearisome burden of life, which I bear ſo much againſt my inclination! this very ſpot will yield me what I aſk, if I can truſt the ſolitary appearance of theſe mountains. Alas! how much more agreeable is the company of theſe rocks and thickets, which give me opportunities of complaining to Heaven, than that of faithleſs man! ſince nature hath not created one of whom I could reaſonably expect advice in difficulty, comfort in affliction, or remedy in diſtreſs!'

This exclamation was diſtinctly overheard by the prieſt and his company, who, concluding that the perſon who ſpoke muſt be hard by, aroſe to make farther enquiry, and had not gone twenty paces, when, behind the fragment of a rock, they perceived a boy ſitting under an aſh-tree, in the habit of a peaſant, whoſe face, as he ſtooped, in order to waſh his feet in a brook that murmured by him, they could not then ſurvey. Their approach they managed with ſoftneſs and ſilence, while his whole attention was employed in bathing his legs, that ſeemed two cryſtal pillars, which had been produced among the pebbles in the rill. They were ſurprized at the whiteneſs and beauty of his feet, which they could not believe had been formed to tread the clods, and follow the cattle or plough, as his dreſs would have ſeemed to intimate; and the curate, who went foremoſt, finding himſelf ſtill unperceived by the youth, made ſigns to the reſt to crouch down, or hide themſelves behind a neighbouring rock. This being done, all three ſtood gazing attentively at the apparition, which was clad in a double ſkirted grey jacket, girt about the middle with a white napkin, and wore breeches and hoſe of the ſame cloth, with a grey hunting-cap upon his head; the hoſe being pulled up to the middle of his leg, which actually ſeemed of white alabaſter. Having waſhed his delicate feet, he wiped them with a handkerchief which he took

out

out of his cap, and in ſo doing, lifted up his head, ſhewing to the by-ſtanders a face of ſuch exquiſite beauty, that Cardenio ſaid in a whiſper to the curate, 'Since that is not Lucinda, it can be no earthly, but ſome celeſtial being!' The youth taking off his cap, and ſhaking his head, a large quantity of hair, that Apollo himſelf might envy, flowed down upon his ſhoulders, and diſcovered to the ſpectators, that the ſuppoſed peaſant was no other than a woman, the moſt delicate and handſome that the curate and barber had ever beheld; or even Cardenio, had he not ſeen and been acquainted with Lucinda, who alone, as he afterwards owned, could contend with her in beauty. Her golden locks fell down in ſuch length and quantity, as not only covered her ſhoulders, but alſo concealed every other part of her body except her feet: and, inſtead of a comb, ſhe made uſe of her hands, which, if her feet looked like cryſtal in the brook, appeared among her hair like moulds of drifted ſnow. All theſe circumſtances increaſing the deſire of the by-ſtanders to know who ſhe was, they reſolved to ſhew themſelves; and at the ſtir they made in advancing, the beauteous phantom raiſed her head, and parting her locks with both hands, to ſee what occaſioned the noiſe ſhe heard, no ſooner perceived them, than ſhe ſtarted up, and, without ſtaying to put on her ſhoes, or tie up her hair, ſeized a bundle that lay by her, and betook herſelf to flight, full of conſternation and ſurprize: but ſhe had not run ſix yards, when her delicate feet, unable to bear the roughneſs of the ſtones, failed under her, and ſhe fell to the ground. This accident being perceived by the other three, they ran to her aſſiſtance, and the curate approaching her firſt, 'Stay, Madam,' ſaid he, 'whoſoever you are; thoſe whom you ſee have no other deſign than that of doing you ſervice: therefore there is no neceſſity for your attempting ſuch a precipitate flight, which neither your own feet nor our inclination will allow.' To this addreſs ſhe made no reply, being quite aſtoniſhed and confuſed; but the prieſt taking her

by

by the hand, proceeded in this manner: 'Madam, though your drefs concealed, your hair hath difcovered manifeft figns, that it muft be no flight caufe which hath fhrouded your beauty in fuch unworthy difguife, and brought you to this folitude, where it is our fortune to find you; and to offer, if not a certain remedy for your misfortune, at leaft our beft advice; for no grievance can harrafs or drive the afflicted to fuch extremity, while life remains, as to make them fhut their ears againft that counfel which is given with the moft humane and benevolent intention. Wherefore, Madam, or Sir, or what you pleafe to be, recollect yourfelf from the confufion in which the fight of us hath thrown you, and tell us the particulars of your good or evil fortune, in full affurance of finding us all together, or each by himfelf, difpofed to fympathize with your affliction.'

While the curate pronounced thefe words, the difguifed damfel ftood wrapt in attention, gazing at them all round, without moving her lips, or uttering one fyllable, like a country villager gaping at rarities which he had never feen before: but the prieft enforcing what he had faid, with other arguments to the fame effect, fhe heaved a profound figh, and broke filence, faying, 'Since thefe folitary mountains have not been able to conceal me, and my loofe difhevelled hair allows me not to difguife the truth, it would be in vain for me to feign fuch things as your reafon could not believe, though your courtefy might excufe them. On that fuppofition, I thank you, gentlemen, for your humane offer, which lays me under the obligation of giving you all the fatisfaction you defire; though I am afraid, that the relation I fhall make of my misfortunes will, inftead of compaffion, excite your difguft, for you will find it impoffible either to cure my woes, or teach me to bear them with fortitude; but, neverthelefs, that my reputation may not fuffer in your opinion, as you have difcovered me to be a woman, and a young one, alone, and in this difguife; circumftances which, confidered either together or apart, might prejudice my

good name in this world; I will freely difclofe to you thofe things, which, if poffible, I would have willingly concealed.'

All this preamble was uttered in a breath by the beautiful apparition, with fuch volubility of tongue, and fweetnefs of voice, that they admired her good fenfe as much as her beauty; and repeating their proffers of fervice, as well as their intreaties that fhe would perform her promife; fhe, without farther importunity, put on her fhoes with great modefty, adjufted her hair, and fat down in the midft of her three hearers, upon a feat in the rock, where, after having endeavoured to reprefs a few tears that ftarted in her eyes, fhe, with a clear and deliberate voice, began the ftory of her life in this manner.

'In this province of Andalufia, there is a place, from whence a certain duke, one of thofe who are called grandees of Spain, derives his title: he hath two fons, the eldeft of whom is heir to his eftate, and, in all appearance, to his good qualities; but the younger inherits nothing that I know, but the treachery of Vellido, and falfhood of Galalon. To this nobleman my parents are vaffals; and though low in pedigree, fo confiderable in wealth, that, if their defcent was equal to their fortune, they would have nothing more to defire, nor I the mortification of feeing myfelf in this diftrefs; for, I believe, my misfortunes proceed from their defect in point of birth, which, though not fo mean as to make them afhamed of their origin, is not fplendid enough to overthrow my conjecture about the fource of my affliction: in fhort, they are farmers, of a plain honeft family, without the leaft intermixture of Moorifh blood; but, as the faying is, old, rufty Chriftians; aye, and fo rufty, that, by their riches and opulent way of living, they are gradually acquiring the title of gentlefolks, nay, of quality too; though what they prized above all riches and title, was their happinefs in having me for their daughter; and therefore, as they had no other child to inherit their eftate, and

were

were naturally the moſt affectionate of parents, I was beloved and indulged by them with the utmoſt degree of parental fondneſs. I was the mirror in which they beheld themſelves, the ſtaff of their age, and ſhared with Heaven their whole attention and deſires, with which, as they were pure and unblemiſhed, my own perfectly correſponded; and therefore, I was miſtreſs of their affection as well as their wealth. By my advice, they received and diſmiſſed their ſervants; the tale and account of what was both ſowed and reaped, paſſed through my hands; I managed the oil-mills, the vineyards, the herds and the flocks, the bee-hives, and every thing that ſuch a rich farmer as my father may be ſuppoſed to poſſeſs: in ſhort, I was ſteward and miſtreſs; and acted with ſuch care and œconomy, that I ſhould not find it eaſy to exaggerate the pleaſure and ſatisfaction which my parents enjoyed. Thoſe parts of the day that remained, after I had given all due attention to the herdſmen, overſeers, and other day-labourers, I employed in exerciſes equally decent and neceſſary for young women, ſuch as lace-making, needle-work, and ſpinning; and if, at any time, I interrupted theſe employments, in order to recreate the mind, I entertained myſelf with ſome religious book, or diverſified my amuſement with the harp; being convinced by experience, that muſic lulls the diſordered thoughts, and elevates the dejected ſpirits. Such was the life I led in my father's houſe; and if I have deſcribed it too minutely, it is not through oſtentation, in order to diſplay our riches, but with a view of manifeſting how innocently I forfeited that happy ſituation, and incurred the miſery of my preſent ſtate. While I paſſed my time in theſe occupations, my retirement was ſuch as almoſt equalled that of a nunnery, being ſeen by nobody, as I thought, but the ſervants of the family; for I went to maſs early in the morning, accompanied by my mother and the maids, and veiled with ſuch reſerve, that my eyes ſcarce beheld the ground on which I trod; yet, nevertheleſs, I was perceived by thoſe of

love, or rather libertinifm, which even exceeds the lynx in penetration, and then poffeffed the faculties of Don Fernando, younger fon of the duke whom I have already mentioned.'

She no fooner mentioned the name of Don Fernando, than Cardenio changed colour, and began to fweat with fuch agitation, that the curate and barber, perceiving it, were afraid he would be feized with one of thofe fits of diftraction which, as they had heard, affaulted him from time to time; but, after fome drops of fweat had burft out upon his fkin, he remained quiet, and looking earneftly at the farmer's fair daughter, immediately gueffed who fhe was; while fhe, without obferving the emotions of Cardenio, went on with her ftory, in thefe words: 'And he no fooner beheld me, than, as he afterwards protefted, he deeply felt the power of love, which indeed his behaviour clearly evinced; but, to fhorten the account of my misfortune, which is lengthened beyond all comfort, I will pafs over in filence the induftrious fchemes that Don Fernando planned, for opportunities of declaring his paffion. He bribed every fervant in the family, and even made prefents and proffers of fervice to my relations: there was nothing but gaiety and rejoicing all day long in our ftreet; and all night, it was impoffible to fleep for ferenades. The letters which, through an unknown channel, came to my hand, were without number, filled with the moft amorous flights and profeffions, and vows and promifes in every line; but all thefe efforts, far from foothing, hardened me againft him, as much as if he had been my mortal foe; and all the ftratagems he practifed, in order to fubdue my coynefs, had a quite contrary effect: not that I was difgufted at the gallantry of Don Fernando, or enraged at his importunities, for I felt a certain kind of pleafure in being courted and beloved by fuch a noble cavalier; neither did I take umbrage at feeing myfelf praifed in his letters; for it is my opinion, that all women, let them be never fo homely, are pleafed to hear themfelves cele-

brated

brated for beauty; but, to all these artifices, I opposed my own virtue, together with the repeated advices of my parents, who plainly perceived the passion of Don Fernando, because he himself took no care to conceal it from the world. They assured me, that in my virtue and prudence alone they confided and deposited their own honour and reputation: they bade me consider the inequality between Don Fernando and me, which was a convincing proof that his love, though he himself asserted the contrary, tended more to his gratification than my advantage; and said, if I could throw any obstruction in his way, to make him quit his unjust pretensions, I should be married immediately, according to my own choice, either to one of the principal persons of our own town, or to some gentleman in the neighbourhood, as I had abundance of lovers, attracted by their wealth, and my reputation. With these assurances, the truth of which I could not doubt, I fortified my integrity, and would never send any reply to Don Fernando, that could in the most distant manner flatter him with the hope of accomplishing his wish: but all my reserve, which he ought to have looked upon as the effect of disdain, served only to whet his libidinous appetite, which is the true name of the passion he professed; for, had it been genuine love, you would not now be listening to my story, which I should have had no occasion to recount.

'In fine, Don Fernando got notice that my parents intended to bestow me in marriage, that they might deprive him of all hope of possessing me, or, at least, provide me with more guards to protect my virtue; and this piece of news alarmed him so much, that he put in practice an expedient to retard the dreaded match. One night, while I sat in my apartment, attended by my maid only, the doors being all fast locked, that through negligence my virtue might not be in danger, without knowing or comprehending the means of his conveyance, he appeared before me, in the midst of this reserve, precaution, solitude, silence,

and retreat! At ſight of him, I was ſo much confounded, that the light forſook my eyes, and my tongue denied it's office; ſo that being deprived of the power of utterance, I could not cry for help; neither, I believe, would he have ſuffered me to exclaim; for he inſtantly ſeized me in his arms, my confuſion being ſuch, that I had not ſtrength to defend myſelf, and began to pour forth ſuch proteſtations, that I cannot conceive how falſhood is able to ape truth ſo exactly. The traitor's tears gave credit to his words, and his ſighs confirmed the honeſty of his intention. I, being a poor young creature by myſelf, altogether unexperienced in thoſe affairs, began, I know not how, to believe his falſe profeſſions; but, not ſo as to be moved to weak compaſſion, either by his vows or artful ſorrow; on the contrary, my firſt ſurprize being over, I recollected my diſſipated ſpirits, and with more courage than I thought myſelf poſſeſſed of, ſaid to him, "Signior, if, inſtead of being within your arms, as I now am, I was in the paws of a fierce lion, and my deliverance entirely depended upon my doing or ſaying any thing prejudicial to my virtue, it would be as impoſſible for me to comply with theſe terms, as it is impoſſible for that which is, to loſe it's exiſtence; wherefore, though you keep my body confined within your arms, I am in full poſſeſſion of my ſoul, with all her chaſte deſires, which are entirely oppoſite to yours, as you will plainly perceive, if you reſolve to proceed in gratifying your wiſhes by force. I am your vaſſal, but not your ſlave; the nobility of your blood neither has, nor ought to have, the power of diſhonouring or deſpiſing the lowlineſs of mine; and my character is as precious to me, though I am but a plebeian farmer's daughter, as yours can be to you, who are a nobleman and cavalier. All your ſtrength ſhall not effect your purpoſe; neither am I to be influenced by your riches, deceived by your words, or melted by your ſighs and tears. Any of theſe expreſſions in a man, to whom my parents ſhould give me in marriage, would

gain

gain my consent and reciprocal inclination; nay, if my honour were safe, I could sacrifice my satisfaction, and voluntarily yield what you, Signior, now attempt to obtain by force; this I observe, that you may rest assured, I will never grant any favour to him who is not my lawful spouse."

"If that be your sole objection, charming Dorothea," (for that is the name of this wretched creature) said the perfidious cavalier, "behold I here present my hand, in pledge of being yours for ever; and may Heaven, from which nothing is concealed, together with that image of the blessed Virgin, bear witness to the sincerity and truth of this declaration!" Cardenio, when she called herself Dorothea, was surprized anew, and was confirmed in his first conjecture; but, unwilling to interrupt the story in which he expected to hear the issue of what he already new, he only said, 'Is your name Dorothea, Madam? I have heard of one of that name, to whose misfortunes yours bear a great resemblance: but pray proceed; the time will come when I shall tell you such things as will equally excite your terrors and affliction.' Dorothea, surprized at the discourse of Cardenio, as well as at his strange and ragged attire, intreated him, if he knew any thing of her affairs, to communicate it immediately; saying, that if fortune had left her any thing of value, it was the courage to endure any disaster that might befal her; though she was almost certain, that what she had already suffered could admit of no addition. 'Madam,' replied Cardenio, 'I would not be the means of impairing that fortitude, by telling you what I know, if my conjecture be right; neither is there any opportunity lost, nor is it of any consequence to you, whether you hear it or not.'—'Be that as it will,' answered Dorothea, 'I will go on with the sequel of my story. Don Fernando, addressing himself to the image he found in my apartment, invoked the blessed Virgin to bear witness to our nuptials, and avowed himself my husband with the most binding and solemn oaths; though, before he proceeded so far, I desired him to reflect upon

what

what he was going to do, and consider how much his father might be incensed at his conduct, when he should find him married to the daughter of his own farmer and vassal. I cautioned him against being blinded by my beauty, such as it was, telling him it would be far from being a sufficient excuse for his error; and begged, if he had any love and regard for me, he would manifest it, in leaving me to a fate more adequate to my rank and circumstances; observing, that such unequal matches were seldom blessed with a long duration of those raptures with which they begin.

'All these reflections I repeated to him, with many more which I do not remember; but they had no effect in diverting him from the prosecution of his purpose; for he was like a man, who, in making a bargain, never boggles at the price of the commodity, because he never intends to pay it. At the same time, I held a short conference with my own breast, saying within myself, "Neither shall I be the first, who, by marriage, has risen from a low station to rank and grandeur; nor will Don Fernando be the first nobleman whom beauty, or rather blind affection, hath induced to share his greatness with a partner of unequal birth. Since, therefore, I neither make a new world nor a new custom, it is but reasonable in me to embrace this honour that fortune throws in my way; and although the affection he professes should not survive the accomplishment of his wish, I shall nevertheless, in the sight of God, remain his true and lawful wife. Besides, should I treat him with disdain, I see he is determined to transgress the bounds of duty, and avail himself of force; in which case, I shall be dishonoured, and inexcusable in the opinion of those who do not know how innocently I have incurred their censure; for where shall I find arguments to persuade my parents, that this cavalier entered my apartment without my knowledge and consent?"

'All these reflections, which my imagination revolved in an instant, began to sway me towards that which (though I little thought so) proved my ruin; especially when

when aided and enforced by the oaths of Don Fernando, the powers he called to witneſs, the tears he ſhed, and, in ſhort, by his genteel carriage and agreeable diſpoſition, accompanied by ſuch marks of real paſſion, as might have melted any other heart as ſoft and unexperienced as mine. I called my maid to be a joint evidence with the powers of Heaven: Don Fernando repeated and confirmed his oaths; took other ſaints to witneſs his integrity; imprecated a thouſand curſes on his head, in caſe he ſhould fail to fulfil his promiſe; had recourſe to ſighs and tears again, ſtraining me ſtill cloſer in his arms, from which he had never releaſed me. By theſe means, and the departure of my maid, I forfeited that name, and he became a falſe and finiſhed traitor.

'The morning that ſucceeded this night of my miſfortune, did not arrive ſo ſoon, I believe, as Don Fernando could have wiſhed; for, when once a man hath ſatisfied his rage of appetite, his chief inclination is to quit the ſcene of his ſucceſs. This I obſerve, becauſe Don Fernando ſeemed impatient to be gone; and, by the induſtry of my maid, who had conducted him to my chamber, found himſelf in the ſtreet before day: when he took his leave, he told me, though not with ſuch violence of rapture as he expreſſed on his firſt coming, that I might depend upon his honour, and the ſincerity of the oaths he had ſworn; as a farther confirmation of which, he took a ring of value from his finger, and put it upon mine. In ſhort, he vaniſhed, leaving me in a ſituation which I can neither call joyful nor ſad. This I know, that I remained in a ſtate of confuſion and perplexity, and, as it were, beſide myſelf, on account of what had happened; but I either wanted courage or memory to quarrel with my maid for the perfidy ſhe had been guilty of, in conducting Don Fernando to my apartment; indeed, I could not as yet determine, whether the adventure would redound to my advantage or misfortune. I told him, at parting, that now I was his wife, he might ſee me any night, by the ſame means he had uſed to procure the firſt interview, until he ſhould

think

think proper to make our marriage publick: but, except the following night, I could never ſet eyes on him, either in the ſtreet or at church, during a whole month, which I ſpent in the utmoſt anxiety of expectation; although I knew he was in town, and almoſt every day employed in the chace, an exerciſe to which he was greatly addicted. Thoſe were doleful and diſtracting hours and days to me; for then I began to doubt, and afterwards to diſbelieve, the faith of Don Fernando; then was my maid expoſed to thoſe rebukes for her preſumption, which ſhe had never heard before; then was I obliged to huſband my tears, and wear compoſure on my countenance, that I might not give occaſion to my parents to aſk the cauſe of my diſcontent, and be put to the trouble of inventing falſhoods to deceive them. But all this conſtraint was baniſhed by an event, the knowledge of which trod down all other reſpects, put an end to all my prudent meaſures, and, by deſtroying my patience, publiſhed my misfortune to the world. This was no other than a report that ſoon after prevailed in our town, by which I learned that Don Fernando was married, in a neighbouring city, to a young lady of exceeding beauty, and diſtinguiſhed birth, though her parents could not give her a portion ſuitable to ſuch a noble alliance. I underſtood her name was Lucinda, and that ſeveral ſurprizing accidents had happened at their nuptials.'

Cardenio hearing Lucinda's name, though he ſaid nothing, ſhrugged up his ſhoulders, bit his lips, contracted the ſkin of his forehead, and diſcharged from his eyes two fountains of tears; but, notwithſtanding, Dorothea continued her ſtory, ſaying, 'This melancholy piece of news no ſooner reached my ears, than, inſtead of freezing, it inflamed my heart with ſuch rage and fury, that I had well-nigh run out into the ſtreets, and publiſhed aloud the falſhood and treachery he had practiſed upon me: but my rage was reſtrained for that time, by a plan which I conceived, and actually put in execution that very night. I dreſſed myſelf in this garb, which I

received

received from one of the ſwains belonging to the houſe, to whom I diſcloſed my whole misfortune, intreating him to attend me to the city, where I underſtood my adverſary was. After having diſapproved of the attempt, and blamed my reſolution, ſeeing me determined, he offered to keep me company, as he ſaid, to the world's end: that moment I packed up my woman's dreſs in a pillow-caſe, together with ſome jewels and money, as a reſource in time of need; and in the dead of that very night, without giving the leaſt hint to my perfidious maid, left my father's houſe, and accompanied by my ſervant, and a thouſand ſtrange imaginations, ſet out for that city on foot, winged with the deſire of finding Don Fernando; and reſolved, though I could not prevent what was already done, to demand with what conſcience he had done it.

'In two days and an half I arrived at the city, and enquiring for the Houſe of Lucinda's parents, the firſt perſon to whom I put the queſtion, told me more than I deſired to hear. He directed me to the houſe, and related every incident which had happened at his daughter's wedding; a ſtory ſo publick, that it was the common town-talk. He ſaid, that on the night of their nuptials, after ſhe had pronounced the "Yes," by which he became her huſband, Lucinda was ſeized with a violent fit; that Don Fernando opened her breaſt to give her freſh air, found in it a paper written with her own hand, importing that ſhe could not lawfully eſpouſe Fernando, being already the wife of Cardenio, who, as the man told me, was one of the principal cavaliers of that town; and that ſhe had now pronounced the fatal Yes," merely becauſe ſhe would not ſwerve from the obedience ſhe owed to her parents; in ſhort, he ſaid, the contents of the paper plainly gave them to underſtand, that ſhe intended to make away with herſelf, immediately after the ceremony, induced by the reaſons which were there contained; and this reſolution was confirmed by a poignard which they found concealed in ſome part of her dreſs. Don Fernando perceiving, by what happened,

ed, that Lucinda had baffled, ſcorned, and undervalued his addreſſes, ran to her before ſhe had recovered the uſe of her ſenſes, and, with the poignard they had found, would have ſtabbed her to the heart, had he not been prevented by her parents and the reſt of the company. It was, moreover, reported that Don Fernando immediately retired; and that Lucinda continued in a fit till next day. When ſhe recovered from her ſwoon, ſhe declared to her father and mother, that ſhe was the true and lawful wife of the ſame Cardenio, who, it ſeems, was preſent at the ceremony; and who, when he ſaw her actually married, contrary to his former belief and firm expectation, quitted the city in deſpair, having firſt left a writing that declared the wrong ſhe had done him, and ſignified his intention to baniſh himſelf for ever from the ſociety of mankind. All this tranſaction was ſo notorious and publick in the city, as to furniſh diſcourſe for every body; and the ſubject was not diminiſhed, when it was known that Lucinda was not to be found either in her father's houſe, or in any other part of the town, which were ſearched all over by her parents, who had almoſt run diſtracted, not knowing what other method they ſhould take to retrieve her. This information revived my hopes a little; for I was better pleaſed to have miſſed Don Fernando, than to have found him married to another; thinking, that every gate of comfort was not yet ſhut againſt me; and that Heaven, perhaps, had thrown that impediment in the way of his ſecond marriage, with a view of making him reflect upon what he owed to the firſt; and reminding him of his being a Chriſtian, conſequently more intereſted in the care of his ſoul than in any other human concern. All theſe things I revolved in my imagination; and, as I had no real comfort, conſoled myſelf with the moſt feeble and diſtant hope, in order to ſupport a life which I now abhor.

'While I remained in this city, undetermined what courſe to take, as I could not find Don Fernando, I heard a publick crier deſcribe my perſon and dreſs, and offer a conſiderable reward to any one that ſhould diſcover

ver where I was. Nay, it was ſaid, that I had ſeduced from my father's houſe, the young man who attended me; a circumſtance that touched me to the very ſoul: finding my credit fallen ſo low, that they were not ſatiſfied with publiſhing my eſcape, but muſt needs alſo mention my attendant, a creature ſo mean and unworthy of my attention and regard, as ſoon as I heard myſelf proclaimed, I quitted the town, accompanied by my ſervant, who already began to give marks of ſtaggering in his promiſed faith and fidelity, and that night reached the moſt woody part of this mountain, urged by the fear of being diſcovered; but, as it is commonly obſerved, one miſchance invites another, and the end of one misfortune is often the beginning of a worſe, this was literally my caſe: my truſty ſervant, who had hitherto behaved with ſuch zeal and fidelity, ſeeing me in this ſolitary place, and inſtigated by his own villainy rather than any beauty of mine, attempted to avail himſelf of the opportunity which he thought this deſart offered; and with great impudence, contempt of Heaven, and diſregard to me, began to talk of love; when, finding that I rejected his immodeſt propoſals with juſt indignation and diſdain, he laid aſide intreaties for the uſe of thoſe who might pleaſe to uſe them, and began to employ force for the accompliſhment of his will; but, juſt Heaven, who ſeldom or never abandons the righteous intention, favoured and aſſiſted mine ſo effectually, that, with the little ſtrength I have, and no great trouble, I puſhed him over a precipice, unknowing whether or not he ſurvived the fall; then, as nimbly as my wearineſs and terror would allow, I penetrated farther into the mountain, without any other thought or intention, than that of keeping myſelf concealed from my father, and thoſe whom he had employed to find me out.

'I know not how many months I have lived in this place, where I met with a grazier, who took me into his ſervice, and carried me to his houſe, which ſtands in the very heart of the mountain. Him I ſerved all this time, in quality of a cowherd, endeavouring to be always

in the field, that I might the more eaſily conceal that hair which now ſo unexpectedly diſcovered my ſex: yet, all my care and induſtry were vain; for my maſter having found me out to be a woman, was ſeized with the ſame deſire that took poſſeſſion of my own ſervant. But fortune, with the evil, does not always ſend the remedy; for, I could neither find rock nor bog, by which I might have diſabled my maſter, as I had before puniſhed my man; and therefore, as the leaſt inconvenience, I have left his houſe, and choſen to hide myſelf again among theſe thickets, rather than try my ſtrength againſt him, in defence of my innocence. I ſay, I returned to theſe woods in hopes of finding a place in which I might, without impediment, implore Heaven with ſighs and tears, to have compaſſion upon my miſery, and give me induſtry and grace to overcome it, or quit my being in this ſolitude, without leaving behind me the leaſt trace or remembrance of this forlorn wretch, who, without any fault of her own, hath afforded ſo much matter for converſation and cenſure both at home and abroad.

CHAPTER II.

Of the beautiful Dorothea's Diſcretion, with other pleaſant and entertaining Particulars.

'THIS, gentlemen, is the genuine detail of my tragick ſtory; conſider, therefore, and judge whether or not I have ſufficient cauſe to heave more ſighs than I have vented, utter more complaints than you have heard, and ſhed more tears than have flowed from mine eyes: and when you ſhall have deliberated upon the quality of my misfortune, you will perceive how vain all conſolation muſt be, as the diſeaſe admits of no remedy. I only aſk what you eaſily can, and ought to grant, namely, that you would inform me where I can paſs my life, without being harraſſed by the ſurprize and fear of being found by thoſe who are in ſearch of me. For, though I am well aſſured, that my parents, out of their great love and affection, would receive me again into their favour, ſuch is the ſhame and confuſion

I feel

I feel at the bare thought of their having altered their opinion to my prejudice, that I would rather conceal myſelf from their ſight for ever, than appear in their preſence under the ſuſpicion of having acted contrary to the expectations they entertained from my virtue.' So ſaying, ſhe left off ſpeaking, and her face was overſpread with a bluſh that plainly denoted the ſentiments and confuſion of her ſoul. Thoſe who had heard her ſtory, were equally ſurprized and afflicted at her misfortune; to which the curate was going to offer ſome conſolation and advice, when Cardenio took her by the hand, ſaying, 'It ſeems, then, Madam, you are the beauteous Dorothea, only daughter of Cleonardo the rich!' She was aſtoniſhed to hear her father's name pronounced by one of ſuch a miſerable appearance, (for we have already obſerved, how wretchedly Cardenio was cloathed,) and ſaid to him, 'And who are you, brother, who know ſo well my father's name; which, if I remember aright, I have not once mentioned in the whole courſe of my unfortunate ſtory?'

'I am,' replied Cardenio, 'that unfortunate man, to whom, as you have obſerved, Lucinda ſaid ſhe was married. I am that miſerable Cardenio, whom the villainy of him who reduced you to your preſent ſituation, hath brought to this deplorable condition in which you now ſee me, ragged, half-naked, deſtitute of all human comfort, and, which is ſtill worſe, deprived of my underſtanding, except at certain ſhort intervals, that I enjoy by the permiſſion of Heaven. I, Dorothea, am the perſon who was preſent at the perfidy of Don Fernando, and heard Lucinda pronounce the fatal "Yes," by which ſhe accepted him for a huſband. I am he who wanted reſolution to wait the iſſue of her ſwoon, or ſtay and ſee the reſult of that paper which was found in her boſom; for, my ſoul could not ſuſtain the ſhock of ſuch accumulated misfortune; and therefore, I quitted the houſe, already abandoned by my patience, and leaving a letter with my hoſt, whom I charged to deliver it into Lucinda's own hand, betook myſelf to theſe

desarts, with an intention here to finish the life which from that instant I have abhorred as my most inveterate foe. But fate hath not been pleased to grant my wish, contenting itself with having deprived me of my judgment, with a view, perhaps, of reserving me for better fortune; which I begin to hope may proceed from this lucky meeting with you, since, if that which you have recounted be true, as I believe it is, there is a possibility that Heaven may have in store for us both, a more favourable termination of our disasters than we imagine; for, supposing that Lucinda, who is already my wife, as she hath openly declared, cannot be married to Don Fernando, nor he lawfully wed her, being already espoused to you, I think we have reason to hope, that Heaven will one day restore what mutually belongs to us; as it is neither alienated, ruined, nor irretrievable. And since this consolation still remains, sprung from hopes that are not very remote, and founded on expectations which are not the effects of a disordered imagination, I entreat you, Madam, in the purity of your sentiments, to change your present resolution, as I intend to alter mine, and accommodate yourself to the hopes of better fortune; for, I swear upon the faith of a gentleman and a Christian, that I will never abandon you, until I see you in the arms of Don Fernando, whom, if I cannot by reasonable arguments, bring to a true sense of his duty towards you, I will then use that privilege to which every gentleman is intitled, and in single combat demand satisfaction for the injury he has done you, without minding my own wrongs, which I will leave to the vengeance of Heaven, that I may the sooner revenge yours upon earth.'

This speech of Cardenio put an end to the surprize of Dorothea, who being at a loss how to thank him for his kind and generous offer, stooped in order to kiss his feet, but this piece of condescension he would by no means allow. The priest answering for both, approved of Cardenio's declaration; and, in a particular manner, intreated, advised, and persuaded them, to accompany

pany him to the village where he lived, in order to provide themſelves with what they wanted; and there conſult ſome ſcheme either for finding Don Fernando, or for carrying Dorothea back to her parents, or, in ſhort, for doing that which ſhould ſeem moſt neceſſary and convenient. Cardenio and Dorothea thanked him for his courteous offer, which they immediately embraced; and the barber, who had been ſilent and attentive all this time, having joined the curate in his compliments and hearty proffers of ſervice, briefly recounted the cauſe which had brought them thither; namely, the ſtrange madneſs of Don Quixote; obſerving, that they were then waiting for the return of his ſquire, whom they had ſent in queſt of his maſter. Cardenio immediately, as if it had been the faint impreſſion of a dream, recollected and related the quarrel which had happened between the knight and him, though he could not remember the cauſe of the diſpute.

At that inſtant they heard and recognized the voice of Sancho; who, not finding them in the place where he had left them, hallooed aloud; upon which they went to meet him, and enquiring about Don Quixote, were told by the ſquire, that he found him naked to the ſhirt, wan, meagre, half famiſhed, and ſighing for his miſtreſs Dulcinea; that when he (Sancho) told him ſhe had commanded him to quit that place, and go immediately to Toboſo, where ſhe waited with impatience to ſee him, he had anſwered, that he was determined never to appear before her, until he ſhould have performed ſuch atchievements as would render him worthy of her favour; and Sancho obſerved, that if this reſolution ſhould hold, it was poſſible he might never attain to the rank of an emperor, as he was in duty bound, nor even to that of an archbiſhop, which was the leaſt he could expect. He deſired them, therefore, to conſider ſome means of diſengaging the knight from his ſolitude. The prieſt bade him be under no concern, for they would fall upon a method to remove his maſter whether he would or no.

Then he explained to Cardenio and Dorothea, the plan they had laid to cure Don Quixote of his madneſs, or at leaſt bring him back to his own houſe. This Dorothea no ſooner underſtood, than ſhe told him, that ſhe was more proper than the barber for acting the part of the diſtreſſed damſel; eſpecially, as ſhe had cloaths along with her, that would anſwer the purpoſe; and bade them truſt to her, for repreſenting every part of the character which ſhould be neceſſary towards the ſucceſs of their deſign, for ſhe had read a great many books of chivalry, and was perfectly well acquainted with the ſtile in which afflicted damſels were wont to beg boons of knights-errant. 'If that be the caſe,' ſaid the curate, 'let us not delay the execution of our ſcheme; for, without doubt, Heaven ſeems to favour my endeavours; not only in opening a door ſo unexpectedly towards the cure of your misfortunes, but alſo in making you ſubſervient in facilitating our ſucceſs.' Dorothea then pulled out of her pillow-caſe, a gown and petticoat of very rich ſtuff, with a beautiful green mantelet, and opening a little caſket, took out a rich necklace and other jewels, with which ſhe inſtantly dreſſed herſelf to ſuch advantage, that ſhe appeared like a lady of the firſt rank and fortune. All theſe, and other ornaments, ſhe ſaid, ſhe had carried off from her father's houſe, in caſe of what might happen; though hitherto ſhe had met with no opportunity of uſing them. Every one preſent was charmed with her graceful mien, eaſy deportment, and exceeding beauty; and paſſed ſentence on Don Fernando, as a perſon of little taſte and diſcernment, for having abandoned ſuch excellence. But the admiration of Sancho was ſuperior to that of all the reſt; for he actually thought, and indeed it was true, that in all the days of his life, he had never ſeen ſuch a beautiful creature; and, accordingly, aſked the curate, with great eagerneſs, who that handſome lady was, and what ſhe looked for in theſe bye places. 'Friend Sancho,' anſwered the curate, 'that handſome lady, to ſay no more

more of her, is heiress, in the direct male line, of the kingdom of Micomicon*, come hither to beg a boon of your master, that he would redress a wrong and grievance done to her by a discourteous giant; for such is the fame and reputation of that excellent knight, Don Quixote, through the whole extent of Guinea, as to induce this princess to come from thence in quest of him.'—'Blessed quest!' cried Sancho, 'and happy finding, say I! especially if my master should be so fortunate as to right the wrong, and redress the grievance, by killing that son of a whore of a giant that your worship mentions; and kill him he certainly will, if they should once meet, provided he be not a phantom; for you must know, my master has no power over phantoms. But one thing, among many others, I must beg of you, Mr. Licentiate, and that is, to put my master out of conceit of an archbishoprick, for I am afraid his inclination leans that way, and advise him to marry this princess out of hand, a match which will make it impossible for him to receive holy orders; and therefore he will the more easily arrive at the seat of empire, and I at the end of my wish. For I have carefully considered the affair, and by my reckoning, I shall not find my account in his being an archbishop, as I am altogether unfit for the church, by reason of my being married; and for me, who have a wife and children, to be petitioning for dispensations to hold livings, would be an endless task. Wherefore, Signior, the point is this: let my master immediately take to wife this same lady, whose name I do not know; for, indeed, I never saw her grace before this blessed minute.' 'She is called the princess Micomicona,' replied the curate, 'because her kingdom being Micomicon, it is plain her name must be Micomicona.' 'Yes, to be sure,' said Sancho; 'I have known several people take a surname and addition from the place of their nativity, calling themselves, for example, Pedro d'Alcala, Juna de Ubeda, Diego de Valladolid; and I suppose they have

* As if he had said Ape-land, *mico* signifying an ape.

have the ſame cuſtom in Guinea, where the queens take their names from the kingdoms they rule.' The prieſt confirmed Sancho's opinion, and promiſed to uſe his utmoſt influence to promote the marriage of the knight. With this aſſurance Sancho reſted as much ſatisfied as the other was ſurprized at his ſimplicity, when he perceived how carefully he cheriſhed, in his imagination, the ſame extravagant whims that poſſeſſed his maſter, whom he firmly believed would one day become an emperor.

By this time, Dorothea being mounted on the curate's mule, and the barber's face accommodated with the ox's tail by way of a beard, they deſired Sancho to guide them to the place where Don Quixote was, and cautioned him againſt pretending to know the licentiate and his companion, aſſuring him that his maſter's becoming an emperor entirely depended upon his profeſſing ignorance of their perſons. Yet neither the curate nor Cardenio would accompany them; becauſe the preſence of this laſt might recall to the knight's memory the quarrel which had happened between them; and it was not yet proper that the prieſt ſhould appear; for which reaſons, they let the reſt proceed by themſelves, and they followed at a ſmall diſtance, after the curate had given her cue to Dorothea; who deſired him to make himſelf perfectly eaſy on her account, for ſhe would act the part aſſigned to her, without the leaſt occaſion for a prompter, in the true ſtile and ſpirit of knight-errantry.

Having travelled about three quarters of a league, they diſcovered Don Quixote already cloathed, though ſtill unarmed, ſitting in the midſt of a labyrinth of rocks; and Dorothea no ſooner underſtood it was he, in conſequence of Sancho's information, than ſhe whipped up her palfrey, cloſe attended by the well-bearded barber, who, when ſhe approached the knight, threw himſelf from his mule, and ran to help his lady to alight. But ſhe, diſmounting with great agility, went and fell upon her knees before Don Quixote, whom, in ſpite

ſpite of his repeated endeavours to raiſe her, ſhe accoſted in theſe words:

'Never will I riſe from this poſture, moſt valiant and invincible knight, until your benevolence and courteſy grant me a boon, which will not only redound to the honour and applauſe of your own perſon, but alſo to the advantage of the moſt injured and diſconſolate damſel that ever the ſun beheld; and if the valour of your mighty arm correſponds with the voice of your immortal fame, you are obliged to favour the unfortunate, who, attracted by the odour of your celebrated name, come from far diſtant regions, in queſt of your aſſiſtance.'—'Beauteous lady,' replied Don Quixote, 'I will not anſwer one word; nor hear one circumſtance of your affairs, until you riſe from the ground.'—'I will not riſe, Signior,' anſwered the afflicted damſel, 'until I ſhall have obtained from your condeſcenſion, the boon I beg.'—'I condeſcend and grant it,' reſumed the knight, 'provided, in ſo doing, I act neither to the detriment nor derogation of my king, my country, and her who holds my heart and liberty*.'—'Your compliance, worthy Signior,' replied the mourning lady, 'ſhall in no ways affect the exceptions you have made.'

At

* When a knight had once granted a boon in this manner, it was impoſſible for him to retract, let the requeſt be never ſo extravagant. We are told by Joinville, that the queen of St. Lewis, being big with child, and in the utmoſt terror of falling alive into the hands of the infidels at Damietta in Egypt, fell upon her knees before an old knight turned of fourſcore, and conjured him to grant her a boon: the old man having promiſed to comply, on the faith of his knighthood, ſhe told him the favour ſhe ſo preſſingly ſolicited, was, that he would cut off her head before ſhe ſhould fall into the hands of the enemy, provided the Saracens ſhould become maſters of the town. The ſenior anſwered without heſitation, that ſhe might depend upon his ſword; and owned he had taken that reſolution even before ſhe ſignified her requeſt.

At that inſtant Sancho came up, and whiſpered ſoftly in his maſter's ear, 'Your worſhip may ſafely grant the boon ſhe aſk's, which is a mere trifle; no more than ſlaying a giantiſh ſort of a fellow; and ſhe who begs it, is the high and mighty princeſs Micomicona, queen of the great empire of Micomicon in Ethiopia.'—'Whoſoever ſhe is,' anſwered Don Quixote, 'I will do what I am in duty bound to perform, and act according to the dictates of my own conſcience, and conformable to the order I profeſs.' Then turning to Dorothea, 'Riſe, moſt beautiful lady,' ſaid he, 'the boon you aſk is granted.'—'Then, what I aſk is this,' reſumed the damſel, 'that your magnanimity would immediately accompany me to the place from whence I came, and promiſe to attempt no other adventure, nor grant any other requeſt, until you ſhall have taken vengeance on a traitor who hath uſurped my crown, contrary to all right, human and divine'—'I grant your requeſt, Madam,' anſwered Don Quixote; 'henceforth you may diſpel that melancholy with which you are depreſſed, and let your fainting hope reſume new ſtrength and vigour; for, with the aſſiſtance of God, and this my arm, you ſhall, in a ſhort time, ſee yourſelf reſtored to your kingdom, and ſeated on the throne of your royal anceſtors, in defiance and deſpite of all thoſe evil-deſigning perſons who mean to oppoſe you: let us ſet hands to the work then; for according to the common obſervation, Delay breeds danger'

The diſtreſſed damſel ſtruggled with great perſeverance, to kiſs his hand; but Don Quixote, who was in all reſpects a well-bred knight, would by no means allow ſuch humiliation: on the contrary, raiſing her up, he embraced her with great politeneſs and cordiality, ordering Sancho to ſecure Rozinante's girths, and help him to arm with all expedition. The ſquire taking down the armour, which hung on a tree, in the manner of a trophy, and adjuſting the horſe's girths, in a twinkling, equipped his maſter, who finding himſelf armed, 'Now,' ſaid he, 'let us go, in the name of God,

God, to the aſſiſtance of this high-born lady.' The barber, who was all this time on his knees, at infinite pains to preſerve his gravity and his beard, the fall of which, perhaps, would have utterly ruined their laudable deſign, when he found the boon was granted, and ſaw with what eagerneſs the knight undertook to fulfil it, roſe up, and, with the aſſiſtance of Don Quixote, helped his lady upon her mule again; then her protector beſtrode Rozinante, and he himſelf mounted his own beaſt, while Sancho Panza, being left on foot, felt the loſs of Dapple anew: but this he contentedly bore, believing that his maſter was now in the right road, and almoſt at the very point of being an emperor; for he aſſured himſelf, that the knight would wed that princeſs, and ſo become King of Micomicon at leaſt: the only uneaſineſs he felt, was, on account of that kingdom's being in the land of negroes, ſo that all his ſervants and vaſſals muſt be black; but his imagination ſupplied him with a remedy for this inconvenience, and he ſaid within himſelf, 'Suppoſe my vaſſals are negroes, what elſe have I to do, but tranſport them to Spain, where I can ſell them for ready money, with which I may purchaſe ſome title or poſt that will maintain me at my eaſe all the days of my life! No, to be ſure! ſleep on, void of all invention or ability to diſpoſe of your ware, and ſell thirty, or ten thouſand ſlaves in the turning of a ſtraw! Before God! I'll make them fly, little and big, or juſt as I may; and, blacks as they are, turn them all into whites and yellows! Let me alone to ſuck my own fingers.' With theſe conceits he was ſo much engroſſed, and ſo well ſatisfied, that he actually forgot the pain of travelling on foot.

Cardenio and the curate ſaw every thing that paſſed, from behind ſome buſhes where they were hid, and could fall upon no method of joining them conveniently, until the prieſt, who was an excellent ſchemer, thought of an expedient for the purpoſe; having a pair of ſciſſars about him, he cut of the beard of Cardenio with infinite diſpatch, and giving him a grey jacket, with his

own black cloak, he himſelf remaining in his doublet and hoſe, the tattered cavalier was ſo much altered in point of appearance, that he would ſcarce have known himſelf had he looked in a glaſs. Although the others were jogging on, while they diſguiſed themſelves in this manner, they eaſily reached the highway, before the knight and his company, whoſe beaſts were retarded by the buſhes and rockineſs of the ground; and taking their ſtation juſt at the mouth of the entrance to the mountain, no ſooner perceived the knight and his attendants come forth, than the curate looked earneſtly at him a good while, as if he had been recollecting a perſon whom he knew, then ran to him with open arms, crying aloud, 'Bleſſed be this meeting with the mirror of chivalry, my worthy compatriot Don Quixote de la Mancha, the flower and cream of gentility, the protector and phyſician of the diſtreſſed, and quinteſſence of knights-errant!' So ſaying, he embraced the left-knee of Don Quixote; who being aſtoniſhed at the words and action of the man, began to conſider his features with great attention, and at length, recollecting him, was ſtruck dumb with admiration, at ſeeing him in that place, and made many efforts to alight; which when the prieſt oppoſed, 'Give me leave, Mr. Licentiate,' ſaid he, 'it is not ſeemly that I ſhould remain on horſeback, when ſuch a reverend perſon as you travels on foot.' 'I will by no means,' anſwered the curate, 'conſent to your alighting; ſince, on horſeback, your mighty arm hath atchieved the greateſt exploits and adventures that this age hath ſeen; it ſhall ſuffice for me, who am but an unworthy prieſt, to get up, with permiſſion, behind this gentleman who travels in your worſhip's company; and then I ſhall imagine myſelf mounted upon Pegaſus, a zebra, or that fiery courſer that carried the famous Moor Muzaraque, who ſtill lies enchanted in the vaſt mountain Zulema, at a little diſtance from the great Compluto.' 'I did not think of that expedient, Mr. Licentiate,' replied the knight; 'but I know that my lady the princeſs will, out of re-

gard

gard to me, be pleaſed to order her ſquire to accommodate you with the ſaddle of his mule, and he himſelf may ride upon the crupper, if the beaſt will carry double.' 'I believe ſhe will,' ſaid the princeſs; and I am ſure, there will be no occaſion to lay my commands upon my ſquire, who is too courteous and polite, to ſuffer an eccleſiaſtic to travel on foot, when it is in his power to provide him with a beaſt.' 'Your majeſty is in the right,' anſwered the barber; who inſtantly alighting, complimented the curate with the ſaddle, which was accepted without much intreaty.

But the misfortune was, when the ſquire attempted to get up behind, the mule, which was an hireling, conſequently miſchievous, lifted up her hind legs, and kicked with ſuch fury, that had they lighted on the head or breaſt of Mr. Nicholas, he would have had reaſon to curſe the hour on which he ſet out in queſt of Don Quixote: ſuch, however, was his confuſion, that he came to the ground, and his beard being neglected, fell off; ſo that he could find no other method to prevent a diſcovery, than to clap both hands to his face, with great expedition, and roar out that his teeth were demoliſhed. Don Quixote, ſeeing the huge maſs of beard torn from the jaw, without blood, and lying at a good diſtance from the ſquire's face, 'Good heavens!' cried he, 'what a wonderful phœnomenon is this! the beard is taken off and ſhaved as clean by the heel of the mule, as if it had been done by the hand of a barber.' The curate, ſeeing the riſk he ran of being detected in his ſcheme, ſnatched up the tail, and running with it to Mr. Nicholas, who ſtill lay bellowing for help, pulled his head to his breaſt with one jerk, and clapping it on again, muttered ſome words, which he ſaid were an infallible charm for fixing on beards, as they ſhould preſently ſee; accordingly, when the affair was adjuſted, he quitted the ſquire, who now ſeemed as well bearded and as ſound as ever; a circumſtance that, above meaſure, ſurprized the knight, who begged that the curate, at a proper opportunity, would impart to him the charm,

which he imagined muſt contain more virtues than that of cementing beards, becauſe it was plain, that where the hair was torn off, the ſkin and fleſh muſt be lacerated and hurt, and if the application could heal thoſe wounded parts, it was good for ſomething more than mere muſtachios. The curate confirmed his conjecture, and promiſed to diſcloſe the ſecret to him with the firſt proper opportunity; then it was agreed, that the prieſt ſhould mount the mule by himſelf, and, with the other two, ride her by turns, until they ſhould arrive at the inn, which was about two leagues off.

Don Quixote, the princeſs, and the curate, being thus mounted, and Cardenio, the barber, and Sancho Panza, following on foot, the knight told the damſel, that her highneſs might conduct him whitherſoever ſhe pleaſed; but, before ſhe could make any reply, the prieſt interpoſed, ſaying, 'Towards what kingdom is your majeſty journeying? I am much miſtaken in my notions of kingdoms, if you are not bound for Micomicon?' She, who had been well inſtructed in her cue, concluding that ſhe muſt anſwer in the affirmative, ſaid, 'Yes, Signior, that is the place of my deſtination.'—'Then you muſt paſs through our village,' anſwered the curate, 'and take your route to Carthagena, where your highneſs may happily embark; and if you meet with no hurricane, but be favoured with a fair wind and ſmooth ſea, in ſomething leſs than nine years, you may get ſight of that vaſt Lake Meona, I mean, Meotis, which is a little more than one hundred days journey from your majeſty's kingdom.'—'Your worſhip muſt be miſtaken,' ſaid the princeſs, 'for two years are not yet elapſed ſince I ſet out from thence; and though the weather has always been bad, I have already obtained what I ſo much longed after, namely, the ſight of Signior Don Quixote de La Mancha, whoſe fame reached my ears as ſoon as I landed in Spain, and induced me to come in queſt of him, that I might ſolicit his courteſy, and truſt my righteous cauſe to the valour of his invincible arm.'—'Enough, Madam,' ſaid Don Quixote; 'ſpare

'spare your encomiums; for I am an utter enemy to all sorts of adulation; and, although you are not to be suspected of flattery, my chaste ears are always offended at that kind of discourse. What I can safely affirm, is this: whether I have valour or not, here is he, valiant or pusillanimous, who will exert himself to the last drop of his blood in the service of your highness. But, this apart.—Pray, Mr. Licentiate, what cause hath brought you hither alone, where I am really astonished to find you so ill attended, and so slightly cloathed?

'In that particular you shall soon be satisfied,' answered the curate: 'your worship must know that I, and our friend Mr. Nicholas the barber, set out for Seville, to recover a sum of money, which was sent to me by a relation of mine that went to the Indies, a good many years ago; no less than sixty thousand pieces of eight in good silver, which make no inconsiderable sum: and yesterday, passing through this place, we were set upon by four highwaymen, who stripped us even to our very wiskers, and that in such a manner as obliged the barber to wear artificial ones; and you may see,' pointing to Cardenio, 'how they have despoiled the face of this young man who accompanied us; and the cream of the story is, that, according to the public report, which prevails in this neighbourhood, those who robbed us were galley slaves, that, almost in this very place, were set at liberty by a man so valiant, as to let them all loose, in spite of the commissary and his guards. Without all doubt he must have been deprived of his senses, or as great a villain as any of those he freed, or some person void of all conscience and feeling, who could thus turn loose the wolf among the lambs, the fox among the poultry, and the flies among the honey-pots; defrauding justice, and rebelling against his king and rightful sovereign, by acting contrary to his just commands, in depriving the gallies of their hands, and putting in confusion the holy brotherhood, which have continued so many years in undisturbed repose: in short, he

he hath done a deed that may tend to the perdition of his own ſoul as well as body.'

Sancho had before recounted to them the adventure of the galley-ſlaves, which he had atchieved with ſo much glory; and therefore the curate urged it home, in order to obſerve the behaviour of Don Quixote, who changed colour at every word, without daring to own himſelf the deliverer of that worthy crew. 'Thoſe,' added the prieſt, 'were the perſons who rifled us; and God of his infinite mercy forgive the man who prevented the puniſhment they ſo richly deſerved!'

CHAPTER III.

The pleaſant Artifice practiſed to extricate our enamoured Knight from the moſt rigorous Penance he had impoſed upon himſelf.

SCARCE had the curate pronounced this apoſtrophe, when Sancho blundered out—'Then, in good faith, Mr. Licentiate, he who performed this exploit, was no other than my maſter; not that I neglected to tell and adviſe him beforehand, to conſider what he was about, and think what a ſin it would be to let looſe thoſe who were going to the gallies for the moſt grievous enormities.'—'You blockhead,' cried Don Quixote, incenſed 'it neither concerns nor belongs to knights-errant, to examine whether the afflicted, the enſlaved, and oppreſſed, whom they meet on the highway, are reduced to theſe wretched circumſtances by their crimes, or their misfortunes; our buſineſs is only to aſſiſt them in their diſtreſs, having an eye to their ſufferings, and not to their demerits. I chanced to light upon a ſtring of miſerable and diſcontented objects, in behalf of whom I acted according to the dictates of my religion, without minding the conſequence; and he who takes umbrage at what I have done, ſaving the ſacred character and honourable perſon of Mr. Licentiate, is, I inſiſt upon it, utterly ignorant of chivalry, and lies like the baſe-born ſon of a whore; and this aſſertion I will make good with my ſword, in the moſt ample manner.' So ſaying,

ſaying, he fixed himſelf in the ſtirrups, and cocked his beaver; the barber's baſon, which he miſtook for Mambrino's helmet, hanging uſeleſs at the ſaddle-bow, until the damage it received from the galley-ſlaves could be repaired.

Dorothea, who was equally prudent and witty, underſtanding that every body preſent, except Sancho, diverted themſelves with the extravagant humour of Don Quixote, was willing to have her ſhare of the entertainment; and accordingly, perceiving that his indignation was raiſed, 'Sir knight,' ſaid ſhe, 'I hope your worſhip will remember your promiſe to me, by which you are reſtricted from engaging in any other adventure, howſoever preſſing it may be. Subdue your reſentment therefore, and be aſſured, that had Mr. Licentiate known the galley-ſlaves were ſet at liberty by that invincible arm, he would have taken three ſtitches in his mouth, and bit his tongue three times, rather than have uttered one word that ſhould redound to the prejudice of your worſhip.'—'That I ſwear I would have done,' ſaid the curate; 'aye, and have plucked off one of my wiſkers to boot.'—'Madam,' anſwered the knight, 'I am ſilent. I will reſtrain the juſt indignation which begins to riſe within me, and proceed in the utmoſt peace and quiet, until I ſhall have fulfilled the boon I promiſed to your highneſs; but, in recompence for this my kind intention, I beſeech you, if it be not too much trouble, to make me acquainted with the nature of your misfortune; and tell me the number, quality, and condition of thoſe perſons on whom I am to take juſt ſatisfaction and full vengeance, in your behalf.'—'With all my heart,' anſwered Dorothea; 'though I am afraid of tiring you with a recital of woes and misfortunes.' The knight aſſured her that would be impoſſible; and ſhe reſumed, 'Well then, be ſo good as to favour me with your attention.'

At theſe words, Cardenio and the barber went up cloſe to her, in order to hear what ſtory ſhe, in her diſcretion, would invent; and Sancho Panza, who was as

much deceived as his maſter, followed their example. After ſhe had ſeated herſelf firmly in the ſaddle, cleared her pipes with a hem or two, and made other preliminary geſtures, ſhe with great ſprightlineſs thus began:

'In the firſt place, gentlemen, you muſt know that my name is ——' Here ſhe made a full ſtop, having forgot how the curate had chriſtened her: but this defect was ſoon remedied; for, immediately conceiving the cauſe of her heſitation, he ſaid, 'It is no wonder, Madam, that your highneſs is diſturbed and diſordered at the recollection of your misfortunes, which are often ſo great, as to impair the memory to ſuch a degree, that the afflicted cannot even remember their own names: this effect they have had upon you, Madam, who have forgot that you are the Princeſs Micomicona, legitimate heireſs of the great kingdom of Micomicon. With the aſſiſtance of this hint, your highneſs will eaſily recal the whole thread of your ſtory to your ſorrowful remembrance.'—'You are in the right,' replied the damſel; 'and I believe I ſhall be able to bring my true narrative to a happy concluſion, without farther prompting.

'The king, my father, whoſe name was Tinacrio the ſage, foreſaw, by his profound ſkill in magic, that my mother, who was called Queen Zaramilla, would die before him; and that, as he himſelf muſt quit this life ſoon after, I ſhould be left an helpleſs orphan; but this conſideration, he ſaid, did not give him ſo much pain and confuſion, as the certain foreknowledge that a monſtrous giant, lord of a great iſland that bordered on our kingdom, called Pandafilando of the Gloomy Aſpect: (for, it is affirmed, that although his eyes are, like any other perſon's, placed in the middle of his face, he always looks aſkance, as if he ſquinted; and this obliquity the malicious tyrant practiſes, in order to ſurprize and intimidate thoſe who behold him;) I ſay, my father foreſaw by his art, that this giant, informed of my being an orphan, would invade me with a great army, and deprive me of my whole kingdom, without leaving ſo much as a village for my retreat;

treat; and that nothing could prevent this my ruin and misfortune, unleſs I would conſent to marry him; though, ſo far as he could learn, it would never come into my thoughts to make ſuch an unequal match; and truly his conjecture was well founded; for, it never entered into my head, to wed this giant, or any other perſon, howſoever tall and unmeaſurable be might be. My father, therefore, adviſed me, that when, after his death, I ſhould get notice that Padanfilando was beginning to invade my kingdom, I ſhould not ſtay to put myſelf in a poſture of defence, which would prove my deſtruction, but freely leave him the poſſeſſion of my realms, if I was reſolved to avoid my own death, and to prevent the total deſtruction of my good and faithful ſubjects; for it would be impoſſible to defend myſelf againſt the infernal force of the giant: but, that I ſhould immediately ſet out for Spain, where I would find a remedy for all my misfortunes, in the perſon of a certain knight-errant, whoſe fame would be at that time ſpread over the whole kingdom, and whoſe name, if I right remember, would be Don Hackſot, or Kickſot.' 'Don Quixote, your ladyſhip would ſay,' cried Sancho, interpoſing, 'alias the Knight of the Rueful Countenance.' 'The very ſame,' replied Dorothea: 'he told me, moreover, that this knight would be a tall man, with a long meagre viſage, and have on his right ſide, below his left ſhoulder, or thereabouts, a grey mole garniſhed with hairs, which bear ſome reſemblance to a hog's briſtles.'

Don Quixote hearing this circumſtance, ſaid to his ſquire, 'Come hither, ſon Sancho, and help me to ſtrip; for I want to ſee if I am actually the knight of whom that ſage king foretold.'—'Why ſhould your worſhip ſtrip? ſaid Dorothea. 'In order to ſatisfy myſelf about that mole which your royal father mentioned.'—'You need not give yourſelf the trouble,' ſaid Sancho; 'I know your worſhip hath juſt ſuch a mole on the middle of your back-bone, which is a ſign of ſtrength.'—'That aſſurance is ſufficient,' reſumed Dorothea,

rothea, 'for, among friends, we ought not to ſtand upon trifles; and it is of very little conſequence whether the mole be upon the ſhoulder or the back-bone, provided there is really ſuch a mark on any part of your body, which is all compoſed of the ſame fleſh. Without doubt my worthy father was right in every thing he prognoſticated; and I have exactly followed his directions, in recommending my cauſe to the protection of Signior Don Quixote, who is certainly the individual knight my father deſcribed; ſince his features correſpond with his fame, which fills not only Spain, but likewiſe the whole province of La Mancha;* for ſcarce had I landed at Offuna, than hearing of vaſt exploits, my mind ſuggeſted that he muſt be the very perſon I came in queſt of.'—How could your highneſs," ſaid Don Quixote, 'land at Offuna, which is not a ſea-port?

Before ſhe had time to make a reply, the curate took the taſk upon himſelf, ſaying, 'The princeſs muſt mean, that after ſhe landed at Malaga, Offuna was the firſt place in which ſhe heard of your worſhip.'—'That was my meaning,' ſaid Dorothea. 'There is nothing more plain,' anſwered the prieſt; 'and now your majeſty may proceed.'—'I have nothing more to ſay,' reſumed the princeſs, 'but that, at length, deſtiny has been ſo favourable to me, in my finding Don Quixote, I reckon and look upon myſelf as queen again, and miſtreſs of my whole realms, ſince, out of his great courteſy and magnificence, he hath promiſed, in conſequence of the boon I aſked, to go with me whitherſoever I ſhall conduct him; and my intentions is no other than to bring him face to face with Pandafilando of the Gloomy Aſpect, that he may, by putting him to death, reſtore me to the poſſeſſion of that which he ſo unjuſtly uſurps; and all this will literally happen, as it was propheſied by my father Tinacrio the Sage, who hath alſo left it written

* This is a diverting example of the Bathos, not unlike that anticlimax repeated in the art of ſinking.

Nor Alps, nor Appenines could keep us out,
Nor fortified redoubt!

written in Chaldean or Greek characters, for I cannot read them, that if the knight mentioned in the prophecy ſhould, after having cut off the giant's head, demand me in marriage, I muſt inſtantly accept of him as my lawful huſband, without the leaſt heſitation, and give him immediate poſſeſſion of my perſon and throne.'

Don Quixote hearing this circumſtance, cried, 'What do you think now, friend Sancho? do you hear what paſſes? and did not I tell thee as much? Obſerve now, whether or not we have not a queen to marry, and a kingdom to govern.'—'Ad-zookers, it is even ſo!' cried the ſquire; 'and plague upon the ſon of a whore who refuſes to marry her, as ſoon as Mr. Pandahiladoe's weazond is cut; then what a delicate morſel the queen is! odd, I wiſh all the fleas in my bed were ſuch as ſhe!' So ſaying, he cut a brace of capers, with marks of infinite ſatisfaction; then running up, and taking hold of the bridle of Dorothea's mule, made her halt, while he, falling down on his knees before her, beſought the princeſs to let him kiſs her hand, in token of his receiving her as his queen and miſtreſs. Which of the company could behold the madneſs of the maſter, and the ſimplicity of the man, without laughing! Dorothea actually gave him her hand, and promiſed to make him a grandee, as ſoon as, by the favour of Heaven, ſhe ſhould be reſtored to the poſſeſſion of her kingdom; and he thanked her in terms which redoubled the mirth of all preſent.

'This, Gentlemen,' added the damſel, 'is my ſtory; and nothing now remains but to tell you, that of all the people who attended me when I left my own country, not one ſurvives, except this well-bearded ſquire; all the reſt having periſhed in a dreadful ſtorm that overtook us after we were within ſight of land: he and I miraculouſly floated to the ſhore on two planks: and indeed the whole courſe of my life, as you may have obſerved in my narration, hath been full of myſtery and wonder. If I have in any thing exceeded the bounds of credibility, or been leſs accurate than I ought,

ought, I hope you will impute it to that cause assigned by the licentiate, in the beginning of my story; namely, the continual and extraordinary affliction, that often impairs the memory of the unfortunate.'—'But, mine shall not be impaired, most high and virtuous lady!' said Don Quixote, 'by all the misfortunes I shall undergo in your service, let them be never so great and unprecedented: therefore I again confirm the boon I have promised, and swear to attend you even to the world's end, until I get sight of that ferocious adversary of yours, whose proud head I hope to slice off, with the assistance of God, my own arm, and the edge of this (I will not say good) sword; thanks to Gines de Passamonte who run away with my own.'* This last apostrophe he muttered between his teeth, and then proceeded aloud, saying—'and after I shall have deprived him of his head, and put you in peaceable possession of your throne, you shall be at free liberty to dispose of your person, according to your own will and pleasure: for, while my memory is engrossed, my will enslaved, and my understanding subjected to her who ——I say no more; but, that it is impossible I should incline, or have the least thought towards marrying any other person, though she were a perfect phœnix.'

Sancho was so much disgusted at this last declaration of his master, refusing the marriage, that, raising his voice, he cried with great indignation. 'Signior Don Quixote, I vow and swear your worship is crazy, else you would never boggle at marrying such a high-born princess as this! Do you imagine that fortune will offer such good luck at every turn, as she now presents? or pray, do you think my Lady Dulcinea more handsome than the princess? I am sure she is not half so beautiful, and will even venture to say, that she is not worthy to tie her Majesty's shoe-strings. How the plague shall I ever obtain the earldom I expect, if your worship goes thus a fishing for mushrooms at sea? Mary

* If the knight was robbed of his own sword by Gines, where did he find that which he wore on this occasion?

ry her, marry her, in the devil's name, without much ado; lay hold on this kingdom that drops, as it were, into your hand; and, after your coronation, make me a marquis or lord-lieutenant, and then the devil, if he will, may run away with the reſt.'

Don Quixote was enraged when he heard ſuch blaſphemies uttered againſt his miſtreſs Dulcinea, and lifting up his lance, without ſpeaking a ſyllable, or giving the leaſt notice of his intention, diſcharged two ſuch hearty blows upon the ſquire, as brought him inſtantly to the ground; and had not Dorothea called aloud, and begged of him to forbear, would certainly have murdered poor Sancho on the ſpot. 'Do you think,' ſaid he, after ſome pauſe, 'you plebeian ſcoundrel, that I will always ſtand with my hands in my pockets; and that there is nothing to be done, but for you to miſbehave, and for me to forgive you? I'll teach you better manners, you excommunicated raſcal; for ſuch to be ſure you are, elſe you would not wag your tongue againſt the peerleſs Dulcinea. Don't you know, you grovelling beggarly villain, that were it not for the valour with which ſhe inſpires this arm, I ſhould not have enough to kill a flea? Tell me, you viperiſh ſcoffer, what you think hath won this kingdom, cut off the giant's head, and made you a marquis, for all this I look upon as already done and determined? Is it not the valour of Dulcinea that makes uſe of my arm as the inſtrument of her exploits? In me ſhe fights and overcomes; in her I live, breathe, and have my being. O thou whoreſon, ungrateful ruffian, who ſeeſt thyſelf raiſed from the duſt of the earth to the rank of nobility, and repayeſt the obligation by ſlandering thy benefactreſs.'

Sancho was not ſo roughly handled but he heard every ſyllable that his maſter ſpoke; and, ſtarting up as nimbly as he could, ran behind Dorothea's palfrey, from whence he ſaid to the knight, 'Pray, Sir, if your worſhip is determined againſt marrying this great princeſs, is it not plain, that the kingdom cannot be yours;

and

and if that be the caſe, what favours can you beſtow upon me? This is what I complain of. I would your worſhip would, once for all, marry this queen, who is, as it were, rained down from Heaven upon us; and then you may converſe with my Lady Dulcinea, according to the cuſtom of ſome kings who keep concubines. As to the affair of beauty, I will not intermeddle; but, if the truth may be told, I like them both very well, though I never ſaw my Lady Dulcinea in my life.'—'How! not ſeen her, blaſphemous traitor!' cried Don Quixote; 'have you not juſt brought a meſſage from her?'—'I ſay,' anſwered Sancho, 'that when I ſaw her, I had not an opportunity of examining the particulars of her beauty and good qualities one by one; but all together ſhe pleaſed me very much.' 'Now, Sancho,' ſaid Don Quixote, 'I exculpate thee, and thou muſt forgive what I did in my wrath; for no man can command the firſt emotions of his paſſion.'—'That I can plainly perceive,' anſwered the ſquire, 'and therefore, the deſire of ſpeaking is always the firſt motion in me; and truly, when once my tongue begins to itch, I cannot for my blood keep it within my teeth.'—'For all that, friend Sancho,' ſaid the knight, 'I would have you conſider before you ſpeak; for, though the pitcher goes often to the well—I need not mention what follows.'—'In good time,' replied the ſquire, 'there is a God above, who ſees the ſnare, and will judge which of us is the moſt to blame; I in ſpeaking, or your worſhip in doing evil.'—'Let there be no more of this, Sancho,' ſaid Dorothea, 'but run and kiſs your maſter's hand, and beg his pardon; and henceforth ſet a better guard upon your praiſe and diſparagement; above all things, beware of ſaying any thing to the prejudice of that Lady Toboſo, whom I know by nothing elſe than my inclination to ſerve her: and if you put your truſt in God, you will not fail of acquiring ſome eſtate, by which you will live like a prince.'

Sancho took her advice, and, hanging his head, went to beg a kiſs of his maſter's hand, which was granted with

with great ſolemnity of deportment; nay, the knight gave him his bleſſing alſo, deſiring he would attend him while he rode on a little before the reſt of the company, that he might have a better opportunity of aſking a few queſtions, and converſing with him about affairs of the utmoſt importance. Sancho obeyed the order; and the two having advanced a good way before the reſt, 'Since thy return,' ſaid Don Quixote, 'I have had neither time nor convenience to enquire about many particular circumſtances of thy embaſſy, with the anſwer thou haſt brought: and now that fortune favours us with a fit opportunity, thou muſt not deny me the pleaſure I ſhall receive from thy agreeable information.'—'Your worſhip,' anſwered the ſquire, 'may aſk as many queſtions as you pleaſe: I ſhall make every thing come out as clear as it went in; but I intreat your worſhip, dear Sir, not to be ſo revengeful for the future.'—'Why doſt thou call me revengeful?' ſaid the knight. 'Becauſe,' reſumed the ſquire, 'thoſe blows I was juſt now honoured with were more owing to the quarrel the devil picked between us, t'other night, than to any thing I ſaid againſt my Lady Dulcinea, whom I love and reverence as a relick, though ſhe be not one, merely becauſe ſhe appertains to your worſhip.'—'No more of theſe reflections, on thy life,' ſaid Don Quixote; 'elſe thou wilt give me freſh umbrage. I freely forgave thee at that time, and thou knoweſt, that, according to the common obſervation, Every new fault deſerves a new penance.'

While this converſation paſſed between them, they perceived a man riding towards them on an aſs; and, when he came a little nearer, diſcerned him to be a gypſie; but Sancho Panza, who ſent his ſoul abroad with his eyes, to examine every aſs that appeared, no ſooner beheld the rider, than he recognized Gines de Paſſamonte, and by the thread of the gypſie diſcovered the clue of his own aſs; for it was actually Dapple that carried Paſſamonte, who, for the better convenience of ſelling the beaſt, had diſguiſed himſelf in the

drefs of a gypfie, whofe language, with many others, he could fpeak as fluently as his mother-tongue. Sancho faw and recollected him, and no fooner had he feen and recollected him, than he bellowed forth, 'Ah, villain, Ginefillo! reftore my goods! give me back the comfort of my life! rob me not of my heart's content! give me my afs! give me my darling! Fly, thief! fkip, robber! and feek not to preferve that which is none of thy own.'

There was no need of all this exclamation and reproach; for Gines leaped off at the firft word, and at a pretty round trot, which might have paffed for a gallop, made the beft of his way, and vanifhed in a twinkling. Sancho running to his afs, embraced it with great affection, faying, 'How haft thou been, my dear Dapple? my trufty companion and joy of my eyes!' Then kiffed and careffed it as if it had been a Chriftian; while Dapple very peaceably received thefe demonftrations of love and kindnefs, without anfwering one word. The whole company wifhed him joy of his recovery; particularly Don Quixote, who affured him, that although he had retreived Dapple, the promife of the three colts fhould not be annulled; and Sancho thanked him for his generofity.

While the mafter and man were converfing by themfelves, the curate told Dorothea, that fhe had behaved with great difcretion in her ftory, both with regard to the matter and brevity of it, as well as the refemblance it bore to thofe legends that are found in books of chivalry. She obferved, that fhe had employed a good part of her leifure time in reading fuch romances; but, being ignorant of the fituation of different provinces and fea-ports, fhe had fpoke at random, when fhe mentioned her landing at Offuna.'—'I thought fo,' refumed the prieft, 'and made all hafte to adjuft matters by what I faid; but, is it not very ftrange to fee with what facility this poor unfortunate gentleman fwallows all thofe lies and fictions, merely becaufe they are delivered in the ftile and manner of his nonfenfical books?'

'So

—'So very ſtrange and ſingular,' ſaid Cardenio, 'that I queſtion if there be any genius whatever, ſo fertile as to frame ſuch a character by the mere force of invention.'—'And what is a very remarkable circumſtance,' replied the curate, 'waving thoſe extravagancies which this worthy gentleman utters upon the ſubject of his diſorder, he can diſcourſe upon other topics with ſurpriſing ability, and appears to be a man of great knowledge and intellects; ſo that, if you do not touch upon chivalry, his hearers muſt look upon him as a perſon of excellent underſtanding.'

While they were engaged in this converſation, Don Quixote proceeded in his with Sancho; to whom he ſaid, 'Come, friend Panza, let us forget what is paſt, with regard to animoſity, and tell me, without any ingredient of rancour and reſentment, where and how you found Dulcinea? What was ſhe doing? What did ſhe ſay? What anſwer did ſhe make? How did ſhe look when ſhe read my letter? Who tranſcribed it for her peruſal? Theſe particulars, and every other circumſtance of the affair, which you think worthy to be known, aſked, and anſwered, I expect you will explain, without ſeeking to increaſe my pleaſure with falſe additions, much leſs to diminiſh it by malicious omiſſion.'—'Signior,' ſaid Sancho, 'if the truth muſt be told, nobody tranſcribed the letter; becauſe I had no letter to be tranſcribed.'—'That is very true,' replied the knight; 'for, two days after thy departure, I found the pocket-book in which it was written; a circumſtance that gave me infinite pain, as I could not conceive what thou wouldſt do when the miſtake ſhould appear; indeed I always imagined thou wouldſt have returned hither immediately upon the diſcovery.'—'That would certainly have been the caſe,' ſaid the ſquire, 'if, when your worſhip read it to me, I had not retained it in my memory, ſo perfect as to be able to dictate it to a pariſh clerk, who, as I repeated, tranſcribed it ſo exactly, that he ſaid, in all the days of his life, though he had read many letters of excom-

 munication,

munication, he had never ſeen ſuch a clever letter as yours.'—' And doſt thou ſtill retain it?' ſaid Don Quixote.—' No, Sir,' replied Sancho, ' For, after I had put it into her hand, I thought there was no farther occaſion to retain it, and therefore let it ſlip out of my remembrance; or, if any part remains, it is that of the ſubterrene, I mean ſovereign lady, and the concluſion Yours till death, the Knight of the Rueful Countenance; with about three hundred ſouls, and lives, and pigſnies, which I ſet down in the middle.'

CHAPTER IV.

The ſavoury Converſation that paſſed between Don Quixote and his Squire Sancho Panza, with many other Incidents.

' ALL this is pretty well; proceed!' ſaid Don Quixote: ' how was that queen of beauty employed, when you arrived? I dare ſay, you found her ſtringing pearls, or embroidering ſome device for this her captive knight, with threads of gold.'—' No, truly,' anſwered the ſquire; ' I found her winnowing two buſhels of wheat in the yard.'—' Then you may depend upon it,' reſumed the knight, ' the grains of that wheat were converted into pearls by the touch of her hand; and didſt thou obſerve, my friend, whether it was of the finer or common ſort?'—' Why, neither,' ſaid Sancho; ' it ſeemed to be, as it were, red wheat.'—' But ſince it was winnowed by her fair hands,' anſwered Don Quixote, ' I dare affirm, it will make the whiteſt bread in Spain. Go on with thy information. When the letter was delivered, did ſhe not kiſs it, and place it on the crown of her head, in token of reſpect? Did ſhe not perform ſome ceremony worthy of ſuch a letter? Pray how did ſhe receive it?' —' When I preſented the letter,' anſwered Sancho, ' ſhe was in a main hurry, winnowing a large heap of wheat that was in her ſieve; and ſaid to me, " Friend, lay down the letter on that ſack; for I cannot pretend to read it, until I have made an end of my work."—' Diſcreet lady!' cried the knight;

knight; 'her intention certainly was to read it at her leiſure, that ſhe might recreate herſelf with the contents. Proceed, Sancho; and while ſhe was thus employed, what converſation paſſed between you? what queſtions did ſhe aſk concerning me? and what anſwers didſt thou make? Recount the whole, without leaving one ſyllable untold.'

'She aſked me no queſtions,' replied the ſquire; 'but I told her, how I had left your worſhip doing penance for love of her, ſkipping among thoſe rocks, naked from the waiſt upwards, like a mere ſavage, ſleeping on the bare ground; neglecting to eat your food like a Chriſtian, or to comb your beard like a decent man; but whining, and weeping, and curſing your fortune.'—'If you ſaid I curſed my fortune, you miſrepreſented me,' ſaid Don Quixote; 'for I bleſs my fate, and will bleſs it all the days of my life, for having made me worthy to aſpire to the love of ſuch an high lady as Dulcinea del Toboſo.'—'High indeed!' anſwered Sancho, 'for, in faith, ſhe is a good hand taller than I am.'—'How haſt thou been meaſured with her, Sancho?' ſaid the knight. 'I'll tell you how,' anſwered the ſquire; 'while I was helping to lay a load of corn upon an aſs, we came ſo cloſe together, that I could eaſily perceive ſhe over-topped me by a full hand.'—'That may be true,' ſaid Don Quixote; 'though her tallneſs is accompanied and adorned by a myriad of mental graces. But this you will not deny, Sancho, that while you was ſo near her, your noſtrils were regaled by a Sabæan odour, an aromatick fragrance, a certain delicious ſenſation, for which there is no name. I mean, a ſcent, a perfume, ſuch as fills the ſhop of ſome curious glover.'—'All that I can ſay,' anſwered Sancho, 'is, that I was ſenſible of a ſort of rammiſh ſmell, which I believe was owing to her being in a muck ſweat with hard work.'—'That is impoſſible,' cried the knight; 'thy ſenſe muſt have been depraved, or that ſmell muſt have proceeded from thy own body; for I am perfectly well acquainted with the odour of that

that roſe among briars, that lily of the valley, that liquid amber.' 'It may be ſo,' ſaid Sancho: 'I have often known ſuch ſmells come from my Lady Dulcinea: but that is not to be wondered at; becauſe, as the ſaying is, every fiend may ſtink of brimſtone.' 'Well, then,' added Don Quixote, 'ſhe hath now winnowed the wheat and ſent it to the mill; how did ſhe behave after ſhe had read my letter?' 'The letter,' anſwered Sancho, 'was not read at all; for, as ſhe could neither read nor write, ſhe choſe to rend and tear it to pieces, rather than give it to any body who might publiſh her ſecrets in the village, ſaying, ſhe was very well ſatisfied with the information I gave her by word of mouth, concerning your worſhip's love for her, and the extraordinary penance I left you doing on her account. Finally, ſhe bade me tell you, that ſhe kiſſed your worſhip's hands, being much more deſirous of ſeeing than writing to you; and therefore ſhe entreated and commanded your worſhip, by theſe preſents, to quit this deſart, and leave of playing the fool, and forthwith ſet out on your journey to Toboſo, provided that ſomething elſe of greater importance ſhould not happen, for ſhe longed very much for a ſight of your worſhip, and laughed heartily when I told her, that you had taken the name of the Knight with the Rueful Countenance. When I aſked if the Biſcayan had been lately with her, ſhe anſwered, "Yes;" and that he was very much of a gentleman; but, when I enquired about the galley-ſlaves, ſhe ſaid ſhe had as yet ſeen none of them.'

'Hitherto all goes well,' ſaid the knight: 'but pray tell me what jewel ſhe gave you at parting, for the news you had brought of me her lover; for, it is an ancient practice and cuſtom among knights-errant and their miſtreſſes, to beſtow upon their ſquires, damſels, or dwarfs, who bring them news of each other, ſome rich jewel, as a reward and acknowledgment for the meſſage.' 'It may be ſo,' ſaid Sancho; 'and I think it an excellent cuſtom, but that muſt have been in time

paſt;

paſt; for in this age it is cuſtomary to give nothing but a piece of bread and cheeſe, which was all the preſent I received from my Lady Dulcinea, who reached it over the yard wall, when I took my leave; by this token, that the cheeſe was made of ewe's milk.' 'She is liberal to exceſs,' ſaid the knight; 'and if ſhe omitted giving thee a jewel, it muſt certainly have been owing to her not having any by her; but all in good time; I ſhall ſee her ſoon, and then every thing will be ſet to rights. Yet there is one thing, Sancho, which overwhelms me with aſtoniſhment. You ſeem to have travelled through the air; for you have ſpent little more than three days in your journey; though Toboſo is more than thirty leagues diſtant from hence. From this extraordinary expedition, I conjecture, that the ſage, who is my friend, and intereſts himſelf in my affairs, and ſuch there certainly is, and muſt be, elſe I ſhould be no true knight-errant; I ſay, this inchanter muſt have aſſiſted thee in thy journey, though thou didſt not perceive it; for ſome there are of that claſs, who will take up a knight-errant while he is aſleep in his bed, and, without his knowing any thing of the matter, he ſhall awake next morning in ſome place more than a thouſand leagues from the houſe where he took up his lodging the night before; and without ſuch ſudden tranſportations, it would be impoſſible for knights to ſuccour each other in diſtreſs, as they frequently do. A knight-errant, for example, happens to be fighting in the deſarts of Armenia, with ſome fierce dragon, dreadful goblin, or rival knight; and being worſted, and juſt at the point of being ſlain, behold, when he leaſt expects it, there ſuddenly appears in a cloud or fiery chariot, another knight, a friend of his, who but a minute before reſided in England, and who aſſiſts and delivers him from death; and that ſame night, he finds himſelf ſupping at his eaſe at his own houſe, which is often two or three thouſand leagues from the field of battle; and all this is effected by the

industry

industry and art of sage inchanters, who take those valiant knights under their protection.

'Wherefore, friend Sancho, I can easily believe that thou hast in so little time travelled from hence to Toboso and back again; because, as I have already observed, some friendly sage must have carried thee thro' the air, though thou didst not perceive it.' 'Not unlikely,' replied the squire; 'for, in good faith, Rozinante went like a gypsy's ass, with quicksilver in his ears.' 'With quicksilver,' cried the knight; 'ay, and a legion of dæmons to boot, who are beings that travel themselves, and make other people travel as fast as they please, without tiring.

'But, waving this subject, how doest thou think I ought to regulate my conduct, now that my mistress commands me to appear in her presence? for, although I find myself obliged to comply with her orders, I am utterly incapacitated by the boon I have granted to this princess: and I am bound by the laws of chivalry to fulfil my promise, before I indulge my inclination. On the one hand, I am persecuted and harrassed by the desire of seeing Dulcinea; on the other, I am incited and invited by my honour and the glory I shall acquire in this enterprize. I am therefore determined to travel with all expedition, until I arrive at the place where the giant resides; and, when I shall have restored the princess to the peaceful possession of her kingdom, after having shortened the usurper by the head, I will return to the rays of that beauty which enlightens my thoughts, and excuse myself in such a manner as to obtain her forgiveness, as she will plainly perceive that my delay tended to the increase of her glory and fame; seeing all my reputation in arms, past, present, or to come, proceeds from her favour and inspiration.' 'Lord!' cried Sancho, 'how your worship is concerned about a parcel of pot-sherds. Pray tell me, Sir, do you intend to make this journey for nothing, and to let such a rich and noble marriage as this slip through your fingers; while the dowry is no less than a kingdom, which I

have

have actually heard is more than twenty thousand leagues round, plentifully stored with every thing that is needful for the sustenance of mortal man, and larger than Portugal and Castile put together? Hold your tongue, a God's name, and take shame to yourself, for what you have said: pardon my freedom, take my advice, and marry in the first place where we can find a curate, or make use of our friend the licentiate, who will buckle you handsomely. Take notice, therefore, that I am of an age to give good counsel, and this that I offer will fit you to a hair; for a bird in hand is worth two in the bush; and, as the saying is, He that hath good in his view, and yet will not evil eschew, his folly deserveth to rue.'

'Sancho,' answered Don Quixote, 'if thou advisest me to marry, with a view of seeing me king, after I shall have killed the giant, that I may have an opportunity of rewarding thee with what I have promised, thou must know that I can easily gratify thy wishes, without wedding the princess; for, before I engage in the combat, I will covenant, that, provided I come off conqueror, and decline the marriage, I shall have it in my power to dispose of one part of the kingdom as I shall think proper; and to whom should I give it but to thee?' 'That is very plain,' replied the squire; 'but I beseech your worship to make choice of the sea-coast, because if I should happen to dislike the country, I may ship off my black slaves, and sell them, as I have already hinted. Wherefore, without troubling yourself at present about my Lady Dulcinea, I would have you go and slay the giant, and conclude that affair from which, before God! we shall certainly reap much honour and advantage.' 'I tell thee, Sancho,' said Don Quixote, 'thou art in the right, and I will follow thy advice, so far as it regards my attendance on the princess, before I visit Dulcinea. But say not a word to any body, even those of our company not excepted, of this conversation; for, as she is so reserved and careful of concealing her sentiments, it would be

inexcusable

inexcuſable in me, if I, or any other, through my means, ſhould diſcloſe them.' 'Since this is the caſe,' ſaid the ſquire, 'why does your worſhip command all thoſe that are vanquiſhed by your arm to go and preſent themſelves before my lady Dulcinea? you may as well give it under your hand, that you are her true and truſty lover; for, if you compel them to fall upon their knees before her, and ſay they are ſent by your worſhip to pay homage to her, how is it poſſible that the ſentiments of either you or her can be concealed?'

'What an ignorant and ſimple fellow thou art!' reſumed the knight; 'canſt thou not ſee that all this redounds to her praiſe and exaltation? Thou muſt know, that in our ſtile of chivalry, it is deemed a great honour for a lady to be admired by a great many knights, whoſe wiſhes extend no farther than to the deſire of ſerving her for her own ſake, without expecting any other reward for their great and manifold ſervices, than the glory of being admitted into the number of her knights.' 'In like manner,' ſaid Sancho, 'I have heard a prieſt in the pulpit obſerve, that we muſt love our Saviour for his own ſake, without being moved thereto, by any fear of puniſhment or hopes of applauſe, though, for my own part, I am inclined to love and ſerve him on account of his power.' 'Now the devil take the clown!' cried Don Quixote; 'he ſometimes makes ſuch ſhrewd obſervations one would think he had actually ſtudied;' 'And yet, upon my conſcience,' anſwered the ſquire, 'I know not ſo much as my letters.' At that inſtant Maſter Nicholas calling aloud to them to ſtop a little, that the reſt might have time to drink at a ſpring which they found in the way; Don Quixote turned back, to the no ſmall ſatisfaction of Sancho, who was already tired with telling lies, and afraid of being detected by his maſter; for, although he knew that Dulcinea was the daughter of a peaſant at Toboſo, he had never ſeen her in his life. By this time Cardenio had put on the clothes which Dorothea wore when they found her; and, though they were none of

of the most elegant, he made a much better figure than with his tattered dress, which he now threw away. The whole company sat down by the spring, where, while they appeased the keen hunger that possessed them all, with what the curate had brought from the inn, a lad chanced to pass that way, who, looking earnestly at the whole company, at length run up to Don Quixote, and embracing his knees, began to blubber most heartily, saying, 'Ah, Signior, don't you know me? Look at me again; I am that same individual young man called Andrew, whom your worship delivered from the tree to which I was tied.' The knight recollected his features, and taking him by the hand, addressed himself to the company in these words.

'That you may see of what importance knight-errantry is, to redress the wrongs and grievances which are daily committed by the insolent and wicked wretches who live upon this earth; know, that as I passed by a wood some time ago, I heard the screams and woeful cries of some afflicted creature in the utmost distress: and, in consequence of my oath and obligation, riding towards the place from which the lamentation seemed to come, I found this very young man tied to an oak tree; and I am glad from my soul that he is here in person, to bear witness to the truth. I say, he was bound to an oak, naked from the waist upwards; and a peasant, who I afterwards understood was his master, stood scourging him with the reins of a bridle. When I enquired into the cause of this barbarous treatment, the rustic answered, that he only whipped his own servant for being guilty of some neglect that savoured more of knavishness than simplicity. The boy protested he had done nothing but asked his wages: to this affirmation the master replied, by some asseverations which I have forgot; but though I heard his excuses, I would not admit of them. In short, I ordered the peasant to untie the youth, and made him swear that he would carry him home, and pay him his wages in ready cash, nay, and pay him in rials that should be perfumed. Is not this literally

literally true, son Andrew? Didst thou not observe with what authority I commanded, and with what humility he promised to comply with every thing that I imposed, suggested, and desired? Answer without perturbation or doubt, and tell this honourable company what passed, that they may see and be convinced of what use it is, as I said, to have knights-errant continually upon duty.'

All that your worship hath told is very true,' answered the young man; ' but the end of the business was quite the reverse of what you imagined.' How! the reverse!' cried the knight; ' has not the peasant paid thee thy wages?' ' Far from paying me my wages,' said Andrew, ' your worship was no sooner out of the wood, and we by ourselves again, than he bound me a second time to the same oak, and lashed me so severely, that I remained like St. Bartholomew, flayed alive, and at every stripe he jeered and scoffed, and made game of your worship in such a manner, that if it had not been for the excessive pain I felt, I could not have refrained from laughing at what he said. In short, he treated me so cruelly, that till this very day, I have been in the hospital, for the cure of the wounds I received from that mischievous farmer; and truly your worship was the cause of all that I suffered; for if you had followed your own road, without going where nobody called you, or meddling with other people's affairs, my master would have been satisfied with giving me a cool dozen or two, and then loosed and paid me my due. But when your worship abused him so unseasonably, and called him so many bad names, his choler was inflamed; and, as he could not be revenged upon you, as soon as you was gone, he discharged the storm of his wrath upon me, in such a manner that I shall never be my own man again.'

' The misfortune, said the knight, ' was in my leaving him before I had seen thee paid; for I ought to have known by long experience, that no peasant will keep his word, if he thinks it his interest to break it. But thou mayest remember, Andrew, that I swore if he did not

not perform his promiſe, I would return and ſearch for him, until he ſhould be found, even if he ſhould hide himſelf in the whale's belly.' 'Very true,' replied Andrew; 'but that threat ſignified nothing.' 'Thou ſhalt preſently ſee what it ſignifies!' reſumed Don Quixote; who, getting up haſtily, ordered Sancho to bridle Rozinante, who was following their example in refreſhing himſelf with graſs.

When Dorothea aſked what he intended to do, he replied, he was going in queſt of the peaſant, to chaſtiſe him for his villainous behaviour, and make him pay Andrew to the laſt farthing, in deſpite and defiance of all the ruſtics upon earth. To this declaration ſhe anſwered, by deſiring him, to conſider, that, according to the promiſed boon, he could not engage in any enterprize until her affair ſhould be finiſhed; and ſince this ſtipulation was known to himſelf better than to any other perſon, ſhe intreated him to repreſs his reſentment till his return from her kingdom. 'That is very true,' reſumed the knight; 'and Andrew muſt wait with patience for my return, as your majeſty obſerves; but I repeat my oath and my promiſe, never to deſiſt until I ſhall have ſeen his wages paid, and his injuries revenged.' 'I don't truſt to thoſe oaths,' ſaid Andrew, 'and would rather, at preſent, have wherewithal to bear my expences to Seville, than all the revenge in the world: be ſo good, if you have any victuals, to give me ſomething to eat upon my journey, and the Lord be with your worſhip and all knights-errant, who, I wiſh, may always err as much in their own affairs as they have done in mine.' Sancho, taking a luncheon of bread and cheeſe from the ſtore, gave it to the young man, ſaying, 'Here, brother Andrew, take this; and now we have all ſhared in your misfortune.' When Andrew aſked what ſhare of it had fallen to him, he replied, 'That ſhare of bread and cheeſe, which I have given you; and God knows whether I ſhall not feel the loſs of it; for you muſt know, friend, that we ſquires of knights-errant are ſubject to many a hungry belly, with

 other

other misfortunes which are more eaſily felt than deſcribed.'

Andrew accepted of the bread and cheeſe, and ſeeing that nobody offered him any thing elſe, made his bows, and, as the ſaying is, took his foot in his hand*. True it is, before he departed, he addreſſed himſelf to Don Quixote, ſaying, 'For the love of God! Sir knight-errant, if ever you meet me again, ſpare yourſelf the trouble of coming to my aſſiſtance, even though you ſhould ſee me cut into minced meat, but leave me to my misfortune, which cannot be ſo great but that it may be increaſed by the ſuccour of your worſhip, whom God confound, together with all the knights-errant that ever were born.' Don Quixote ſtarted up, in order to chaſtiſe him, but he ran away with ſuch nimbleneſs, that nobody attempted to purſue him; and the knight was ſo aſhamed of his exploit, that the company were at great pains to contain their laughter, to prevent his being quite out of countenance.

CHAPTER V.

Which treats of what happened to Don Quixote and his Company at the Inn.

THEIR ſumptuous meal being ended, they ſaddled their beaſts, and without meeting any thing worthy of mention, arrived next day at the very inn which was ſo much the dread and terror of Sancho; but, unwilling as he was to enter, he could not avoid going into it. The innkeeper, his wife, daughter, and Maritornes, ſeeing Don Quixote and Sancho at the gate, went out to receive them, with great demonſtrations of joy; and the knight returned their compliments with grave deportment and ſolemn approbation, deſiring them to prepare a better bed for him than that which he had occupied before. To this demand, the landlady anſwered, that, provided he would pay better than he did before, he ſhould lie like a prince: he promiſed to ſee her ſatiſfied,

* Literally, "Took the road in his hands."

fied, and they immediately made up a tolerable bed, in the ſame garret where he had formerly lodged, in which he laid himſelf down, very much diſordered, both in body and mind. He was no ſooner locked up in his chamber, than the landlady attacked the barber, and ſeizing him by the beard, cried, ‘ By my faith! you ſhall no longer uſe my tail for a beard. Give me my tail, I ſay; for it is a ſhame to ſee how my huſband's thing is bandied about for want of it; I mean the comb that he uſed to ſtick in my tail.’ But the barber would not part with it, for all her tugging, until the prieſt deſired him to reſtore it; becauſe there was no farther occaſion for the diſguiſe, as he might now appear in his own ſhape, and tell the knight, that after he had been robbed by the galley-ſlaves, he had fled to that inn; and if he ſhould enquire for the princeſs's gentleman uſher, they would tell him, ſhe had diſpatched him away before her, to advertiſe her friends and ſubjects, that ſhe was upon the road, accompanied by the deliverer of them all. Thus ſatisfied, the barber willingly reſtored the landlady's tail, and every thing elſe they had borrowed with a view of diſengaging Don Quixote from the mountain; and all the people of the inn were aſtoniſhed at the beauty of Dorothea, as alſo at the genteel mien of the ſwain Cardenio. The curate ordered them to get ready ſomething to eat; and the innkeeper, in hope of being well paid, dreſſed, with all diſpatch, a pretty reaſonable dinner; but they did not think proper to waken Don Quixote, who, they believed, ſtood at that time more in need of ſleep than of food.

The diſcourſe at table, in preſence of the innkeeper, his wife, daughter, Maritornes, and all the other lodgers, happening to turn upon the uncommon madneſs of the knight, and the condition in which they found him; the hoſteſs recounted to them, what had happened in her houſe between him and the carrier; then looking round the room, and ſeeing Sancho was not preſent, ſhe told the whole ſtory of the blanketting, to the no ſmall en-

tertainment of the company. The curate obſerving that Don Quixote's underſtanding was diſordered by the books of chivalry he had read, the innkeeper replied, 'I cannot conceive how that is poſſible; for really, in my opinion, they are the beſt reading in the world: I have now in my cuſtody two or three of them, together with ſome other papers, which, I verily believe, have preſerved not only my life, but alſo that of many others; for, in harveſt-time, a great number of reapers come hither, to paſs the heat of the day; and there being always one among them who can read, he takes up a book, and we, to the number of thirty or more, forming a ring about him, liſten with ſuch pleaſure, as were enough to make an old man grow young again; at leaſt, I can ſay for myſelf; when I hear him read of thoſe furious and terrible ſtrokes that have been given by certain knights, I am ſeized with the deſire of being at it myſelf, and could liſten to ſuch ſtories whole nights and days without ceaſing.' 'I wiſh you would, with all my heart,' replied the wife: 'for, I am ſure, I never enjoy a quiet minute in the houſe, except when they are reading, and then you are ſo bamboozled with what you hear, you forget to ſcold for that time.' 'That is the very truth of the matter,' ſaid Maritornes; 'in good faith, I myſelf am hugely diverted, when I hear thoſe things; they are ſo clever, eſpecially when they tell us how yon t'other lady lay among orange-trees, in the embraces of her knight, while a duenna, half dead with envy and ſurpriſe, kept ſentry over them; odd! all theſe things make my chops water.'

'And what is your opinion of the matter, my young miſtreſs?' ſaid the prieſt to the innkeeper's daughter. 'Truly, Signior, I don't well know,' ſhe replied; 'but liſten among the reſt; and really, though I do not underſtand it, I am pleaſed with what I hear; yet I take no delight in thoſe ſtrokes that my father loves; but, in the lamentations made by the knights, when they are abſent from their miſtreſſes, which, in good ſooth, often make me weep with compaſſion.' 'Then

you would soon give them relief, if they mourned for you, my pretty maid?' said Dorothea. 'I don't know what I should do,' answered the girl; 'but, this I know, that some of these ladies are so cruel, their knights call them lions, tygers, and a thousand other reproachful names. Jesus! I can't conceive what sort of folks those must be, who are so hard hearted and unconscionable as to let a man of honour die, or lose his senses, rather than take the least notice of him; why should they be so coy? If their suitors court them in an honest way, let them marry, and that is all the men desire.' 'Hold your peace, child,' said the landlady; 'methinks, you are too well acquainted with these things; young maidens, like you, should neither know nor speak so much.' The daughter said, as the gentleman asked her the question, she could do no less than answer him: and the curate demanded a sight of the books, 'With all my heart,' replied the innkeeper, who, going to his own chamber, brought out an old portmanteau secured with a chain, which being opened, the priest found in it three large volumes, and some manuscripts written in a very fair character.

The first book they opened appeared to be Don Cirongilio of Thrace; the second, Felixmarte of Hyrcania; and the third, was the history of that great Captain Goncalo Hernandes de Cordova, with the life of Diego Garcia de Paredes. The curate having read the titles of the two first, turned to the barber, saying, 'We now want our friend's housekeeper and cousin.' 'Not at all,' answered Mr. Nicholas; 'I myself can convey them to the yard, or rather to the chimney, where there is actually a special good fire.' 'What! you intend to burn these books, then?' said the innkeeper. 'Only these two,' answered the curate, pointing to Don Cirongilio and Felixmarte. 'I suppose, then,' resumed the landlord, 'my books are heretic and flegmatic?' 'You mean schismatic, honest friend, and not flegmatic,' said the barber. 'Even so,' replied the landlord; 'but, if any of them be burnt, let it be the history of that great

 captain,

captain, together with Diego Garcia; for, I would rather ſuffer you to commit my ſon to the flames, than to burn e'er a one of the reſt.' 'Heark ye, brother,' ſaid the curate, 'theſe two books are ſtuffed with lyes, vanity and extravagance; but that of the great captain is a true hiſtory, containing the exploits of Goncalo Hernandez de Cordova, who, by his numerous and valaint atchievements, acquired, all the world over, the epithet of the Great Captain, a renowned and ſplendid appellation, merited by him alone; and that Diego Garcia de Paredes was a noble cavalier, born in the city of Truxillo in Eſtremadura, a moſt valiant ſoldier, and endowed with ſuch bodily ſtrength, that with a ſingle finger he could ſtop a mill-wheel in the heat of its motion; and being once poſted at the end of a bridge, with a two-handed ſword, he alone prevented a vaſt army from paſſing over it; he performed a great many actions of the ſame kind, which he himſelf hath recounted with all the modeſty of a gentleman who writes his own memoirs; whereas, had they been committed to writing by any other free and diſpaſſionate author, they would have eclipſed all the Hector's, Achilles's, and Orlando's, that ever lived.' 'You may tell ſuch ſtuff to my grannam,' ſaid the innkeeper. 'Lord! how you are ſurprized at the ſtopping of a mill-wheel; before God, I adviſe your worſhip to read, as I have done*, the hiſtory of Felixmarte of Hyrcania, who, with a ſingle back ſtroke, cut five giants through the middle, as eaſily as if they had been made of beans, like the figures with which the boys divert themſelves. Another time, he engaged a moſt infinite and powerful army, conſiſting of a million and ſix hundred thouſand ſoldiers, all armed cap-a-pee, whom he totally routed, as if they had been flocks of ſheep. Then what ſhall we ſay of the moſt excellent Don Cirongilio of Thrace, who was ſo valiant and courageous, as may be ſeen in the book of

* It will appear in the ſequel, that the landlord could not read at all; nevertheleſs, he might boaſt of what he could not do.

of his hiſtory, that while he was ſailing on the river a fiery ſerpent roſe above the water, which he no ſooner ſaw, than leaping on its back, he faſtened himſelf aſtride upon its ſcaly ſhoulders, and ſeized it by the throat, with both hands, ſo forcibly, that the ſerpent feeling itſelf well-nigh ſtrangled, could find no other remedy but to dive into the profound, with the knight, who would not quit his hold; and when he deſcended to the bottom, he found himſelf in a palace ſituated in the midſt of a garden that was wonderfully pleaſant; and then the ſerpent turned itſelf into an ancient man, who told him ſuch things as you would rejoice to hear. Say no more, Signior, if you was to hear it, you would run ſtark mad for joy; ſo that, a fig for your great captain, and that ſame Diego Garcia you talk of!

Dorothea hearing this harangue, whiſpered to Cardenio, ‘ Our hoſt wants not much to make the ſecond edition of Don Quixote.’ ‘ I think ſo too,’ anſwered Cardenio; ‘ for, by his diſcourſe, he ſeems to take it for granted, that every thing which is recounted in theſe books, is neither more nor leſs than the truth; and all the capuchins in Spain will not be able to alter his belief.’ ‘ Conſider, brother,’ reſumed the curate, ‘ that there never was upon earth ſuch a perſon as Felixmarte of Hyrcania, nor Don Cirongilio of Thrace, nor any other of ſuch knights as are celebrated in books of chivalry. The whole is a fiction compoſed by idle perſons of genius, for the very purpoſe you mentioned, namely, paſtime, which was the aim of your reapers; for, I ſwear to you, no ſuch knights ever exiſted, nor were any ſuch exploits and extravagancies ever performed in this world.’ ‘ You muſt throw that bone to ſome other dog!’ replied the landlord; ‘ as if I did not know that two and three make five; or where my own ſhoe pinches. Your worſhip muſt not think to feed me with pap, for egad I am no ſuch ſuckling! A good joke, faith! You would make me believe that all the contents of theſe books are madneſs and lies, although they are printed by licence from the king's council; as if they were

perſons

persons who would wink at the printing of such lies, battles, and enchantments, as turn people's brains'— 'Friend,' replied the curate, 'I have already told you, that they are designed for the amusement of our idle hours; and, as in every well-governed commonwealth, the games of chess, billiards, and tennis, are licensed for the entertainment of those who neither can nor ought to work; in like manner, those books are allowed to be printed, on the supposition, that noboby is so ignorant as to believe a syllable of what they contain; and if I was now permitted, or the company required it, I could give some hints towards the improvement of books of chivalry, which perhaps might be both serviceable and entertaining; but I hope the time will come, when I may have an opportunity of imparting my suggestions to those who can convert them to general use: meanwhile, Mr. Publican, you may depend upon the truth of what I have said: take your books away, and settle the affair of their truth or falshood, just as your own comprehension will permit; much good may they do you, and God grant that you may never halt on the same foot on which your lodger Don Quixote is lame!' 'I hope,' answered the innkeeper, 'I shall never be mad enough to turn knight-errant, as I can easily perceive that the customs now-a-days are quite different from those in times past, when, as it is reported, those famous heroes travelled about the world."

Sancho, who had come into the room, about the middle of this conversation, was very much confounded and perplexed, when he heard them observe, that there was no such thing as knight errantry in the present age, and that all the books of chivalry were filled with extravagance and fiction; he therefore determined within himself, to wait the issue of his master's last undertaking; and if it should not succeed as happily as he expected, to leave him, and return, with his wife and children, to his former labour.

When the innkeeper took up the portmanteau with the books, in order to carry them away, 'Stay,' said the

the curate, 'until I examine these papers which are written in such a fair character.' The landlord accordingly pulled out a manuscript, consisting of eight sheets of paper, intitled, in large letters, 'The Novel of the Impertinent Curiosity*.' The priest having read three or four lines to himself, said, 'Really the title of this novel pleases me so much, that I have a strong inclination to peruse the whole.' To this observation, the innkeeper replied, 'Then your reverence may read it aloud; for, you must know, the reading of it hath given great satisfaction to several lodgers at this inn, who have earnestly begged the copy; but the request I would not comply with, because I think of restoring it to the right owner, as I expect that the person who left the portmanteau with the books and papers, in a mistake, will return, on purpose to fetch them; or, you know, he may chance to travel this way on other business; and though I should miss them heavily, in faith they shall be restored; for, though an innkeeper, I am still a Christian.' 'Friend,' said the curate, 'you are very much in the right; but, for all that, if I like the novel, you shall give me leave to transcribe it.' 'With all my heart,' replied the landlord. While this discourse passed between them, Cardenio having taken up the manuscript, and began to read, was of the curate's opinion, and intreated him to read it aloud, that the whole company might hear it. 'I will,' answered the priest, 'if you think we had not better spend the time in sleeping than in reading.' 'For my own part,' said Dorothea, 'it will be a sufficient refreshment for me to listen to some entertaining story; for my mind is not composed enough to let me sleep, even if I stood in need of repose.' 'If that be the case,' resumed the curate, 'I will read it out of curiosity, at a venture, and perhaps it will yield us some entertainment into the bargain.' Master Nicholas earnestly joined in the request, and

* The original, which is *curioso impertinente*, signifies one who is impertinently curious, not a curious impertinent.

and Sancho himſelf expreſſed a deſire of hearing it; upon which the licentiate finding he ſhould pleaſe the whole company as well as himſelf, 'Well, then,' ſaid he, 'liſten with attention, for the novel begins in this manner.'

CHAPTER VI.

The Novel of the Impertinent Curioſity.

'IN Florence, a rich and celebrated city of Italy, ſituated in the province called Tuſcany, lived Anſelmo and Lothario, two wealthy and noble cavaliers, ſo ſtrictly united in the bands of amity, that every body who knew them, called them, by way of excellence and epithet, the Two Friends; and, indeed, being both batchelors, and their age and education ſo much alike, it was not to be wondered at if a reciprocal affection ſprung up between them: true it is, Anſelmo was rather more addicted to amorous paſtime than Lothario, whoſe chief delight was in hunting; yet, upon occaſion, Anſelmo could quit his own amuſements to purſue thoſe of his friend; and Lothario could poſtpone his favourite diverſion, in order to practiſe that of Anſelmo: in this manner their inclinations proceeded ſo mutually, that no clock ever went with more regularity. Anſelmo happened to fall deſperately in love with a young lady of rank and beauty in the ſame city, deſcended from ſuch a noble family, and ſo amiable in herſelf, that he determined, with the approbation of his friend, without which he did nothing, to demand her of her parents in marriage; and accordingly put his reſolution in practice. Lothario was intruſted with the meſſage, and concluded the affair ſo much to the ſatisfaction of his friend, that in a very little time Anſelmo ſaw himſelf in poſſeſſion of his heart's deſire; and Camilla thought herſelf ſo happy in having obtained ſuch a huſband, that ſhe was inceſſant in her acknowledgments to Heaven and Lothario, by whoſe mediation her happineſs was effected.

'During

'During the firſt two days after marriage, which are commonly ſpent in feaſting and mirth, Lothario, as uſual, frequented the houſe of his friend, with a view of honouring his nuptials, and endeavouring, as much as in him lay, to promote the joy and feſtivity attending all ſuch occaſions; but the wedding being over, and the frequency of viſits and congratulations abated, he began carefully and gradually to abſent himſelf from Anſelmo's houſe, thinking, as every prudent perſon would naturally conclude, that a man ought not to viſit and frequent the houſe of a friend after he is married, in the ſame manner has he had practiſed while he was ſingle; for, though ſuſpicion ſhould never find harbour with true and virtuous friendſhip, yet the honour of a married man is ſo delicate, as to be thought ſubject to injury, not only from a friend, but even from a brother. Anſelmo perceived Lothario's remiſſneſs, and complained of it loudly; ſaying, that if he had thought his marriage would have impaired their former correſpondence, he never would have altered his condition; and begged, that as by the mutual friendſhip which inſpired them while he was ſingle, they had acquired ſuch an agreeable title as that of the Two Friends, he would not ſuffer that endearing and celebrated name to be loſt, by a ſcrupulous adherence to mere form and punctilio. He therefore entreated him, if he might be allowed to uſe the expreſſion, to be maſter of his houſe, and to come in and go out as formerly, aſſuring him that the inclinations of Camilla, in that reſpect, were exactly conformable to his own; and that knowing the perfect friendſhip which ſubſiſted between them, ſhe was extremely mortified at his late ſhyneſs.

'To theſe and many other arguments uſed by Anſelmo, to perſuade his friend to frequent his houſe as uſual, Lothario anſwered with ſuch prudence, force, and diſcernment, that the other was convinced of his diſcreet conduct; and it was agreed betwixt them, that Lothario ſhould dine with him twice a week, beſides holidays; but, notwithſtanding this agreement, he reſolved

to

to comply with it no farther than he ſhould ſee convenient for the honour of Anſelmo, which was dearer to him than his own. He ſaid, and his obſervation was juſt, that a man on whom Heaven hath beſtowed a beautiful wife, ſhould be as cautious of the men he brings home to his houſe, as careful in obſerving the female friends with whom his ſpouſe converſes abroad; for that which cannot be performed nor concerted in the ſtreet or the church, or at public ſhows and diverſions, with which a huſband muſt ſometimes indulge his wife, may be eaſily tranſacted in the houſe of a female friend or relation, in whom his chief confidence is repoſed. Wherefore, Lothario obſerved, that every married man had occaſion for ſome friend to appriſe him of any omiſſion in her conduct; for it often happens that he is too much in love with his wife, to obſerve, or too much afraid of offending her, to preſcribe the limits of her behaviour, in thoſe things, the following or eſchewing of which may tend to his honour or reproach, whereas that inconvenience might be eaſily amended by the advice of a friend. But where ſhall we find ſuch a zealous, diſcreet, truſty friend, as is here required? I really know not, except in Lothario himſelf, who, conſulting the honour of Anſelmo, with the utmoſt care and circumſpection, was at great pains to contract, abridge, and diminiſh, the number of the days on which he had agreed to frequent his houſe; that the idle vulgar, and prying eyes of malice, might not indulge their love of ſlander, when they perceived a genteel young man of ſuch birth, fortune, and accompliſhments as he knew himſelf poſſeſſed of, go into the houſe of ſuch a celebrated beauty as Camilla; for, although his virtue and honour might be a ſufficient check to the moſt malevolent tongue, he would not expoſe his own character, or that of his friend, to the ſmalleſt cenſure; and therefore employed the greateſt part of thoſe days on which he agreed to viſit Anſelmo, in ſuch things as he pretended were indiſpenſible; ſo that when they were preſent, a great deal of time was conſumed by the complaints of

the one, and excuſes of the other. One day, however, as they were walking through a meadow, near the ſuburbs of the city, Anſelmo addreſſed himſelf to Lothario in theſe terms.

"You believe, my friend Lothario, that I can never be thankful enough to Heaven for the bleſſings I enjoy, not only in the moſt indulgent parents, and in the abundance of thoſe things which are called the goods of nature and fortune, but alſo in a friend like you, and a wife like Camilla, two pledges which I eſteem, if not as highly as I ought, at leaſt as much as I can. Yet, though I poſſeſs all thoſe benefits which uſually conſtitute the happineſs of mankind, I find myſelf one of the moſt diſguſted and diſcontented men alive. I have been for theſe many days ſo harraſſed and fatigued with ſuch an odd unaccountable deſire, that I cannot help being amazed at my infatuation, for which I often blame and rebuke myſelf, endeavouring to ſuppreſs and conceal it from my own reflection; but I find it as impoſſible to keep the ſecret, as if I had induſtriouſly publiſhed it to the whole world, and ſince it muſt actually be diſcloſed to ſomebody, I would have it depoſited in the moſt ſecret archives of your heart, in full confidence, that by the diligence which you as a truſty friend will exert in my behalf, when you know it, I ſhall ſoon ſee myſelf delivered from that anxiety to which it hath reduced me, and by your aſſiduity be raiſed to a pitch of joy equal to the degree of vexation which my own folly hath entailed upon me."

'Lothario was aſtoniſhed at this diſcourſe of Anſelmo, as he could not comprehend the meaning of ſuch a long preface and preamble, and endeavoured, by revolving every thing in his imagination, to find out what this deſire could be, that preyed ſo much upon the ſpirits of his friend; but, finding himſelf always wide of the mark, he was willing to eaſe himſelf immediately of the exceſſive pain his ſuſpence occaſioned; and with this view told Anſelmo, that he did a manifeſt injury to the warmth of his friendſhip, in going about the buſh,

ſeeking indirect methods to impart his moſt ſecret thoughts, ſince he was well aſſured that he might entirely depend upon him, either for advice to ſuppreſs, or aſſiſtance to ſupport them. "I am well convinced of the truth of what you ſay," anſwered Anſelmo, "and in that confidence will tell you, my friend, that the deſire with which I am poſſeſſed, is to be certain, whether or not my wife Camilla is as virtuous and perfect as I believe her to be; and this truth I ſhall never be fully perſuaded of, until the perfection of her nature appear upon trial, as pure gold is proved by fire; for it is my opinion, that there is no woman virtuous, but in proportion to the ſolicitation ſhe hath withſtood; and that ſhe only is chaſte, who hath not yielded to the promiſes, preſents, tears, and continual importunities of perſevering lovers. And pray where is the merit of a woman's being chaſte, when nobody ever courted her to be otherwiſe? what wonder that ſhe ſhould be reſerved and cautious, who has no opportunity of indulging looſe inclinations, and who knows her huſband would immediately put her to death ſhould he once catch her tripping? Wherefore I can never entertain the ſame degree of eſteem for a woman who is chaſte out of fear, or want of opportunity, as I would for her who hath triumphed over perſeverance of ſolicitation; ſo that for theſe, and many other reaſons I could urge to ſanction and enforce my opinion, I deſire that my wife Camilla may undergo the teſt, and be refined in the fire of importunate addreſſes, by one poſſeſſed of ſufficient accompliſhments to inſpire a woman with love; and if ſhe comes off, as I believe ſhe will, victorious in the trial, I ſhall think my own happineſs unparalleled. I ſhall then be able to ſay that my wiſhes are fulfilled, and that ſhe hath fallen to my lot, of whom the wiſe man ſaith, "*Who hath found her?*" And even if the contrary of what I expect ſhould happen, the ſatisfaction of ſeeing my opinion confirmed, will help me to bear with patience that which would otherwiſe prove ſuch a coſtly experiment. Suppoſing, then, that nothing you can

say, in opposition to this desire of mine, can avail in diverting me from my purpose, I expect and entreat that you, my friend Lothario, will condescend to be the instrument with which I execute this work of my inclination. I will give you proper opportunities, and supply you with every thing I see necessary for soliciting a woman of virtue, honour, and disinterested reserve; and what among other things induces me to intrust you with this enterprize, is the consideration, that should Camilla's scruples be overcome, you will not pursue your conquest to the last circumstance of rigour, but only suppose that done, which, for good reason, ought to remain undone: so that I shall be injured by her inclination alone, and my wrongs lie buried in the virtue of your silence, which I know, in whatever concerns my welfare, will be eternal as that of death. Wherefore, if you would have me enjoy what deserves to be called life, you will forthwith undertake this amorous contest, not with luke-warmness and langour, but with that eagerness and diligence which corresponds with my wish, and the confidence in which I am secured by your friendship."

'Such was the discourse of Anselmo; to which Lothario listened so attentively, that, except what he is already said to have uttered, he did not open his lips, until his friend had finished his proposal: but finding he had nothing more to alledge, after having for some time gazed upon him as an object hitherto unseen, that inspired him with astonishment and surprise, "I cannot be persuaded, Anselmo," said he, "but what you have said was, spoke in jest; for, had I thought you in earnest, I should not have suffered you to proceed so far; but, by refusing to listen, have prevented such a long harangue. Without doubt, you must either mistake my disposition, or I be utterly unacquainted with yours; and yet I know you to be Anselmo, and you must be sensible that I am Lothario; the misfortune is, I no longer find you the same Anselmo you was wont to be, nor do I appear to you the same Lothario as before;

your discourse favours not that of Anselmo who was my friend, nor is what you ask to be demanded of that Lothario who shared your confidence. Good men, as a certain poet observes, may try and avail themselves of their friends, *usque ad aras*; I mean, not presume upon their friendship, in things contrary to the decrees of Heaven. Now, if a heathen entertained such ideas of friendship, how much more should they be cherished by a Christian, who knows, that no human affection ought to interfere with our love to God; and, when a person stretches his connections so far as to lay aside all respect for heaven, in order to manifest his regard for a friend, he ought not to be swayed by trifles or matters of small consequence, but by those things only on which the life and honour of a friend depend. Tell me, then, Anselmo, which of these is in danger, before I venture to gratify your wish, by complying with the detestible proposal you have made? Surely, neither; on the contrary, if I conceive you aright, you are desirous that I should indefatigably endeavour to deprive you, and myself also, of that very life and honour which it is my duty to preserve; for if I rob you of honour, I rob you of life; since a man without honour, is worse than dead; and I being the instrument, as you desire I should be, that entails such a curse upon you, shall not I be dishonoured, and of consequence dead to all enjoyment and fame? Listen with patience, my friend Anselmo, and make no answer until I shall have done with imparting the suggestions of my mind, concerning the strange proposal you have made; for there will be time enough for you to reply, and me to listen in my turn." "With all my heart," cried Anselmo; "you may speak as long as you please."

'Accordingly, Lothario proceeded, saying, "In my opinion, Anselmo, your disposition is at present like that of the Moors, who will not suffer themselves to be convicted of the errors of their sect, by quotations from the Holy Scripture, nor with arguments founded on speculation, or the articles of faith; but must be confuted

confuted or convinced by examples that are palpable, easy, familiar, and subject to the certainty of mathematical demonstration; for instance, if from equal parts, we take equal parts, those that remain are equal. And if they do not understand this proposition verbally, as is frequently the case, it must be explained and set before their eyes by manual operation, which is also insufficient to persuade them of the truth of our holy religion. The self-same method must I practise with you, whose desire deviates so far from every thing that bears the least shadow of reason, that I should look upon it as time mis-spent, to endeavour to convince you of your folly, which is the only name your intention seems to deserve. Nay, I am even tempted to leave you in your extravagancy, as a punishment for your preposterous desire; but I am prevented from using such rigour by my friendship, which will not permit me to desert you in such manifest danger of perdition. But, to make this affair still more plain, tell me, Anselmo, did not you desire me to solicit one that was reserved, seduce one that was chaste, make presents to one that was disinterested, and assiduously court one that was wise? Yes, such was your demand. If you are apprised, then, of the reserve, virtue, disinterestedness, and prudence of your wife, pray what is your aim? If you believe that she will triumph over all my assaults, as undoubtedly she will, what fairer titles can you bestow upon her, than those she possesses already? or how will she be more perfect after that trial, than she is at present? You either do not believe she is so virtuous as you have represented her, or know not the nature of your demand. If you think she is not so chaste as you have described her, you should not hazard the trial; but rather, according to the dictates of your own prudence, treat her as a vicious woman: if you are satisfied of her virtue, it would be altogether impertinent to make trial of that truth, which, from the test, can acquire no additional esteem. From whence we may reasonably conclude, that for men to execute designs which are clearly pro-

ductive of more hurt then benefit, is the province of madneſs and temerity; eſpecially, when they are not incited or compelled to theſe deſigns by any ſort of conſideration; but, on the contrary, may at a greater diſtance perceive the manifeſt madneſs of their intention. Difficulties are undertaken, either for the ſake of God, of this world, or of both. The firſt are incurred by holy men, who live the life of angels here on earth; the ſecond, by thoſe who traverſe the boundleſs ocean, viſiting ſuch a diverſity of climates and nations, with a view of acquiring what are called the goods of fortune; and ſuch undertakings as equally regard God and man, fall to the ſhare of thoſe valiant ſoldiers, who no ſooner behold, in the wall of an adverſe city, a breach, though no bigger than that which is made by a ſingle cannon-ball, than laying aſide all fear, and overlooking with unconcern the manifeſt danger that menaces them, winged with deſire of ſignalizing their valour in behalf of their king, country, and religion, throw themſelves, with the utmoſt intrepidity, into the midſt of a thouſand deaths that oppoſe and await them. Theſe are the enterprizes which are generally undertaken, and though full of peril and inconvenience, attended with glory, honour, and advantage; but that which you have planned, and purpoſe to put in execution, neither tends to your acquiring the approbation of God, the goods of fortune, nor the applauſe of mankind; for, granting that the experiment ſhould ſucceed to your wiſh, it will make you neither more happy, rich, or reſpected than you are; and ſhould it turn out contrary to your expectation, you will find yourſelf the moſt miſerable of all mortals. It will then give you little eaſe to reflect, that your misfortune is unknown; for, the bare knowing it yourſelf, will be ſufficient to plunge you in affliction and deſpair. As a confirmation of this truth, you muſt give me leave to repeat the following ſtanza, written by the celebrated poet Lewis Tanſilo, at the end of the firſt part of the Tears of St. Peter.

‘ When

"When Peter saw the approach of rosy morn,
"His soul with sorrow and remorse was torn;
"For, though from ev'ry mortal eye conceal'd,
"The guilt to his own bosom stood reveal'd:
"The candid breast will, self-accusing, own
"Each conscious fault, though to the world unknown;
"Nor will th' offender 'scape internal shame,
"Tho' unimpeach'd by justice or by fame."

"Wherefore, secrecy will never assuage your grief; but, on the contrary, you will incessantly weep, not tears from your eyes, but drops of blood from your heart, like that simple doctor, whom our poet mentions*, who made trial of the vessel, which the prudent Rinaldo, with more discretion, refused to touch; and although this be a poetical fiction, it nevertheless contains a well couched moral, worthy of notice, study, and imitation; especially, as what I am going to say, will, I hope, bring you to a due sense of the great error you want to commit.

"Tell me, Anselmo, if Heaven or good fortune had made you master and lawful possessor of an exquisite diamond, the brilliancy of which was admired by all the lapidaries who had seen it, and unanimously allowed to be the most perfect of its kind; an opinion, which, as you knew nothing to the contrary, was exactly conformable to your known; would it be wise or pardonable in you, to put that jewel betwixt an anvil and a hammer, and, by mere dint of blows and strength of arm, try if it was as hard and perfect as it had

*Ludovico Ariosto, author of Orlando Furioso, to which poem Cervantes frequently alludes. Here, however, he seems to have forgot the passage he meant to cite; for the person who proffered the cup to Rinaldo, was no doctor. In Canto 43, of the Orlando Furioso, mention is made, indeed, of one Anselmo, who was a Doctor of Law, but not at all concerned in the enchanted cup; yet it must be owned, that Dr. Anselmo had recourse to an astrologer, in order to know whether his wife preserved her chastity in his absence.

had been pronounced? for, ſuppoſing that the diamond ſhould reſiſt the force of this fooliſh experiment, it would thereby acquire no addition of value or fame; and, if it ſhould be broke to pieces, a thing that might eaſily happen, would not all be loſt? Yes, for certain; and the owner be univerſally deemed a fool. Conſider, then, my friend, that Camilla is an exquiſite diamond, not only in your eſtimation, but in that of every one who knows her; and it would be highly unreaſonable to expoſe her to the leaſt poſſibility of being broke; for, even ſhould ſhe remain entire, her reputation will receive no increaſe; but, ſhould ſhe fail in the trial, reflect upon what you muſt feel, and the reaſon you will then have to complain of yourſelf, for having been the fatal cauſe of her perdition, and your own deſpair. Conſider, that no jewel upon earth is comparable to a woman of virtue and honour; and, that the honour of the ſex conſiſts in the fair characters they maintain. Since, therefore, the reputation of your wife is already as high as it poſſibly can be, why would you bring this truth into queſtion? Remember, my friend, that woman is an imperfect creature; and that, far from laying blocks in her way, over which ſhe might ſtumble and fall, we ought to remove them with care, and clear her paths from all obſtructions, that ſhe may, without trouble, proceed ſmoothly, in attaining to that perfection which ſhe may ſtill want, namely, immaculate virtue. We are informed by naturaliſts, that the ermin is a little animal, covered with a furr of an exceſſive whiteneſs, and that the hunters uſe this artifice to catch it: being well acquainted with the places through which it chuſes to paſs in its flight, they daub them all over with mud, and as ſoon as they get ſight of the creature, drive it directly thither. The ermin finding himſelf thus barricadoed, ſtands ſtill, and is taken: chuſing captivity, rather than, by paſſing through the filth, to ſtain and ſully the whiteneſs of its furr, which it prizes above liberty, and even life itſelf. A chaſte and virtuous wife is like the ermin, her character being more pure and white

white than drifted ſnow; but he who would guard and preſerve it muſt uſe a method quite different from that which is practiſed upon the little animal, and beware of clogging her way with the mud of entertainments, and the addreſſes of importunate lovers; leſt, perhaps, (nay, without a perhaps) ſhe ſhould not poſſeſs ſuch virtue and reſolution as are ſufficient of themſelves to ſurmount thoſe obſtructions. It is therefore neceſſary to remove them, and place before her the purity of virtue, and the beauty of an unblemiſhed reputation. A virtuous woman alſo reſembles a bright tranſparent mirror, which is liable to be ſtained and obſcured by the breath of thoſe who approach too near it. A virtuous woman, like relics, ought to be adored at a diſtance. She ought to be preſerved and eſteemed as a beautiful garden, full of flowers and roſes, the owner of which will ſuffer nobody to handle them or paſs through it, permitting them only to enjoy its fragrance and beauty afar off, through the iron rails that ſurround it. In fine, I will repeat a few verſes that I juſt now recollect, from a modern comedy, becauſe they ſeem to have been compoſed upon the very ſubject of our preſent diſcourſe. A ſage old man adviſing his friend, who is bleſſed with a handſome daughter, to lock her up, and watch over her with the utmoſt vigilance and care, among other reaſons, cautions him with theſe—

I.

"WOMAN is form'd of brittle ware;
"Then wherefore raſhly ſeek to know
"What force, unbroken, ſhe will bear,
"And ſtrike, perhaps, ſome fatal blow?

II.

"Though eaſily to fragments tore,
"'Twere equally abſurd and vain,
"To daſh in pieces on the floor,
"What never can be join'd again.

III.

"This maxim, then, by facts aſſur'd,
"Should henceforth be eſpous'd by all;
"Where'er a Danæ lies immur'd,
"The tempting ſhow'r of gold will fall."

"All that I have hitherto ſuggeſted, Anſelmo, regards yourſelf; and now it is but reaſonable that you ſhould hear ſomething that concerns me; and if I ſhould be prolix in my obſervations, you muſt excuſe me, becauſe it is abſolutely neceſſary to expatiate on the ſubject, in order to extricate you from the labyrinth in which you are involved, and from which you deſire to be diſengaged by my aſſiſtance. You conſider me as a friend, and yet ſeek to deprive me of my honour; a deſire oppoſite to all friendſhip or regard; nay, even endeavour to make me rob you of your own. That you want to deſtroy mine, is plain; for Camilla, finding herſelf expoſed to my ſolicitations, as you deſire, will certainly look upon me as a man void of all principle and honour; becauſe I attempt to ſucceed in a deſign ſo contrary to the dignity of my own character, and the friendſhip ſubſiſting between us. That you deſire I ſhould rob you of yours, is not to be doubted; becauſe, Camilia, ſeeing herſelf importuned by my addreſſes, will think I muſt have obſerved ſome levity in her conduct, which hath encouraged me to diſcloſe my vicious inclinations, and think herſelf diſhonoured accordingly; ſo that you will be as much concerned in her diſhonour, as if it was your own. Hence ſprings the common obſervation, that the huſband of a lewd woman, though he neither knows, nor hath given the leaſt occaſion for the miſconduct of his wife, and tho' his misfortune was neither owing to his want of prudence or care, is, notwithſtanding, pointed at, and diſtinguiſhed by a name of ſcandal and reproach; being looked upon, by thoſe who know the frailty of his wife, with an eye of diſdain, inſtead of compaſſion, which he certainly deſerves, as his diſgrace proceeds not from any fault of his, but from the looſe inclinations of his worthleſs ſpouſe. I will now explain the reaſon, why the huſband of a bad woman is juſtly diſhonoured, though he neither knows, nor hath been in any ſhape acceſſary to her back-ſlidings; and you muſt

hear

hear me with patience, becauſe my remarks will, I hope, redound to your own advantage.

"When God created our firſt parent in the terreſtrial paradiſe, we are told, by the Holy Scripture, that he was thrown into a deep ſleep, during which, the Almighty took a rib from his left ſide, and of this Eve being formed, Adam no ſooner awoke and beheld her, than he cried, "*This creature is fleſh of my fleſh, and bone of my bone.*" Nay, God himſelf pronounced, "*For this ſhall a man leave father and mother, and they two ſhall be one fleſh.*" Then was inſtituted the divine ſacrament of marriage, conſiſting of ſuch ties as death alone can unbind, and endowed with ſuch miraculous virtue and power, as to unite two different perſons in one fleſh; nay, what is ſtill more wonderful, to combine two ſouls, ſo as to produce but one will; provided the union be happily effected. From hence it follows, that the fleſh of the wife being the ſame with that of the huſband, whatever ſtains or blemiſhes are imbibed by the firſt, muſt equally affect the other, although, as I have already obſerved, he is in no manner acceſſary to the misfortune. Wherefore, as the whole perſon is affected by the pain of the foot, or any other member of the human body; and the head, though no way concerned in the cauſe, be a fellow-ſufferer with the ancle when it is hurt; by the ſame rule, an huſband, being a part of the ſame whole, muſt bear a ſhare of his wife's diſhonour; for, as all the honours and diſgraces of this life proceed from fleſh and blood, the infamy of a vicious woman, being of the ſame origin, muſt be ſhared by her huſband, who ought to be looked upon as a diſhonoured perſon, although he be utterly ignorant of the guilt. Reflect, therefore, Anſelmo, on the danger into which you bring yourſelf, by ſeeking to diſturb the peace and tranquillity of your virtuous wife. Reflect upon the vanity and impertinence of that curioſity, which prompts you to awaken and ſtir up thoſe humours that now lie tamed and quiet in the boſom of your chaſte ſpouſe. Conſider, that in this raſh adventure, your

your gain must be very small, but your loss may be so great, that I leave it unmentioned, because I want words to express its estimation. On the whole, if what I have said be insufficient to divert you from your mischievous design, I desire you will chuse some other instrument of your misfortune and disgrace; for I will not undertake the office, though, by my refusal, I should even lose your friendship, which is dearer to me than any thing upon earth."

'Here the virtuous and prudent Lothario left off speaking, and Anselmo remained in such confusion and perplexity, that, for some time, he could not answer one word; at length, however, he broke silence, saying, "I have listened, my friend Lothario, as you may have perceived, with great attention to all you had to say, and by your arguments, examples, and comparisons, am fully convinced, not only of your great discretion, but also of that perfection of friendship to which you have attained: I see also, and own, that in refusing your counsel, and following my own, I avoid the good and pursue the evil. This truth being acknowledged, you must consider me as a person afflicted with that infirmity, which induces some women to swallow earth, chalk, coals, and other things of a worse nature, which, if loathsome to the sight, how much more disagreeable must they be to the taste. Wherefore there is an absolute necessity for using some method of cure, which you may easily effect, by beginning to solicit the love of Camilla, though coldly and feignedly; and, sure, she cannot be so frail as to surrender her virtue at the first encounter. With this slight attempt I shall rest satisfied, and you fulfil the duty of friendship, not only in giving me new life, but also in dissuading me from being the cause of my own dishonour. Nay, you are obliged to comply with my request, by this other consideration, that, determined as I am to put my design into execution, you ought not to allow me to communicate this extravagant resolution to any other person, lest I run the risk of losing that honour which you

you endeavour to preserve; and, as to your suffering in the opinion of Camilla, by attempting to seduce her, that is a reflection of small importance, because, when her integrity is proved, you can soon inform her of our whole contrivance; consequently, regain and repossess the former place you held in her esteem. Since, therefore, by adventuring so little, it is in your power to give me so much satisfaction, I hope you will not refuse the office, even if it was attended with more inconvenience; for I have already told you, that I shall look upon the affair as concluded, whenever you shall have made the first attempt."

'Lothario seeing him fixed in his resolution, even after he had exhausted all his rhetorick to dissuade him from it; and fearing he would execute his threat of imparting his unhappy design to some other person, determined to prevent a greater misfortune, by complying with his desire; purposing, however, to manage the business in such a manner, as to satisfy Anselmo, without altering the sentiment of his wife. With this view, he told Anselmo that he should have no occasion to communicate his intention to any other man; for he, Lothario, would undertake the affair, and begin when he pleased. Anselmo, embracing his friend with great tenderness and affection, thanked him as much for his compliance, as if he had granted him some vast favour; and it was concerted between them, that Lothario should begin the enterprize the very next day, when Anselmo would give him time and opportunity of being alone with Camilla, that he might speak to her with freedom; and also supply him with money and jewels, that with such presents he might promote his suit; he, moreover, advised him to attempt her by music, and write verses in her praise; or, if that would be too much trouble for the gallant, he himself would compose them for the purpose. Lothario undertook every thing, but with a very different intention from what Anselmo supposed; and the agreement being made, they returned to the house of this last, where

they found Camilla waiting with great anxiety for her hufband, who had that day tarried longer than ufual abroad. Lothario foon after went home to his own lodgings, leaving his friend as happy as himfelf was perplexed how to contrive a fcheme for bringing this affair to a fortunate iffue; but that night he fell upon an expedient to deceive Anfelmo, without giving offence to his wife.

'Next day he went to dine with his friend, and was very kindly received by Camilla, who entertained him with great cordiality, as her hufband's intimate companion. Dinner being ended, and the table withdrawn, Anfelmo rifing up, defired Lothario to ftay with Camilla till his return from an indifpenfable piece of bufinefs, that would detain him an hour and a half. Camilla entreated him to defer it until another time, and Lothario offered to go along with him; but he was deaf to both, preffing Lothario to let him go, while he fhould wait at his houfe till he came back, for he wanted to talk with him upon a fubject of the laft importance; at the fame time, defiring Camilla to keep Lothario company till his return; in fhort, he fo well feigned the neceffity, or rather folly, of his abfence, that nobody could have fufpected the deceit. He accordingly went out, and left Camilla and his friend by themfelves, for the reft of the family had gone to dinner; fo that Lothario feeing himfelf within the lifts, according to Anfelmo's defire, with his fair enemy, whofe beauty alone was powerful enough to overcome a whole fquadron of armed knights, it may be eafily conceived what reafon he had to fear, yet all he did was to lean his head on his hand, while his elbow refted upon the arm of the chair in which he fat, and after having begged pardon for his ill-manners, to tell Camilla he would take a nap till Anfelmo's return. She faid he would be more at his eafe in a couch than in the chair, and advifed him to walk into a chamber where he would find one. This offer, however, he declined, and flept where he was till the return of his friend, who finding Camilla in her own

own apartment, and Lothario asleep, concluded that, by his long stay, he had given them time not only to speak, but also to take their repose, and was impatient for Lothario's waking, that he might carry him out to walk, and enquire about his own fortune.

'Every thing succeeded to his wish: when his friend awoke, they went forth together, and he put every question to him that his curiosity suggested. Lothario answered, that thinking it improper to explain himself on the first occasion, he had done nothing but praised Camilla's beauty, which, together with her discretion, he told her engrossed the conversation of the whole city; this he imagined was the most prudent beginning, as it might prepossess her in his favour, and dispose her to listen to him another time with pleasure; being the same artifice which is practised by the devil, who, when he would seduce those who are on their guard, transforms himself from an imp of darkness into an angel of light, and flattering them with specious appearances, at length discovers his cloven foot, and succeeds in his design, provided his deceit be not detected in the beginning.—This declaration was altogether satisfactory to Anselmo, who said, he would give him the same opportunity every day, without quitting the house, in which he would employ himself so artfully, that Camilla should never suspect his design. Many days passed, in which, though Lothario never opened his mouth on the subject to Camilla, he told Anselmo that he had made many efforts, but could never perceive in her the least tendency to weakness, or obtain the least shadow of hope; on the contrary, that she had threatened, if he did not lay aside the wicked design, to disclose the whole affair to her husband.' "Very well," said Anselmo; "hitherto she is proof against words; we must now try whether or not she can resist works also. To-morrow you shall have two thousand crowns in gold, for a present to her; and as much more to purchase jewels, for a bait; these are things with which all beautiful women are captivated; for, be they ever so chaste, they love finery and

gay apparel; if ſhe withſtands that temptation, I will reſt ſatisfied, and give you no further trouble."

'Lothario promiſed to go through with the enterprize, now that he had begun, though he was perſuaded he ſhould be fatigued and baffled in the execution. Next day he received four thouſand crowns, and as many perplexities along with them; for he did not know what lye he ſhould next invent: however, he determined to tell his friend, that Camilla was as invincible to preſents as to words, and that he ſhould give himſelf no farther vexation, ſince all his endeavours were thrown away to no purpoſe; but fortune, which conducted matters in another manner, ordained that Anſemlo, one day, after having, according to cuſtom, left Lothario and his wife by themſelves, and gone to his own chamber, ſhould peep through the key-hole, and liſten to their converſation; it was then he perceived, that in half an hour and more, Lothario did not ſpeak one word; neither would he have opened his mouth, had he remained a whole age in the ſame ſituation.—From hence he concluded, that every thing his friend had told him of Camilla's replies, was mere fiction; but, to be ſtill more aſſured, he came out of his chamber, and calling Lothario aſide, aſked what news he had, and how Camilla ſtood affected to him? He replied, that he was reſolved to drop the buſineſs entirely, for ſhe had checked him with ſuch bitterneſs and indignation, that he had no mind to return to the charge.—"Ah, Lothario! Lothario!" ſaid Anſelmo, "how much you have failed in the duty of friendſhip, and abuſed the confidence I have repoſed in your affection! I have been all this time looking through the key-hole of that door, and perceived that you have not ſpoken one word to Camilla, from whence I ſuſpect that your firſt declaration is yet to come; and if that be the caſe, as without doubt is, wherefore have you thus deceived me; and in ſo doing, prevented me from other means to ſatisfy my deſire?" He ſaid no more, but this was ſufficient to cover Lothario with ſhame and confuſion;

of

who, thinking his honour concerned in being convicted of a lie, ſwore to Anſelmo, he would from that moment take the charge of giving him the ſatisfaction he required, without the leaſt equivocation, as he might perceive by watching him narrowly; though there would be no occaſion for uſing ſuch diligence, becauſe his future behaviour in that affair would acquit him of all ſuſpicion.

'Anſelmo gave credit to his proteſtation; and, that his opportunities might be more ſecure, and leſs ſubject to interruption, reſolved to abſent himſelf from his own houſe for eight days, during which he propoſed to viſit a friend who lived in a village not far from the city; and whom he deſired to invite him to his houſe with the moſt earneſt intreaties, that he might excuſe himſelf to Camilla for his abſence. Unfortunate and imprudent Anſelmo! what art thou doing? what art thou contriving and concerting? Conſider that thou art acting againſt thyſelf, planning thy own diſhonour and perdition. Your wife Camilla is virtuous and ſober, and you poſſeſs her at preſent in quiet, enjoying uninterrupted pleaſure; her inclinations never ramble beyond the walls of your own houſe; you are her paradiſe upon earth, the goal of her deſires, the accompliſhment of her wiſhes, and the ſtandard by which ſhe meaſures her will, adjuſting it in all reſpects according to your pleaſure and the direction of Heaven. Since the mine of her honour, beauty, modeſty, and virtue, yields thee, without trouble, all the riches which it contains, or thou canſt deſire; why wouldſt thou, by digging in ſearch of a new and unheard-of treaſure, riſk the fall or deſtruction of the whole, which is ſuſtained by the feeble props of female conſtancy? Remember it is but juſt, that he who builds on impoſſibilities ſhould be denied the privilege of any other foundation; as the poet hath better expreſſed it in the following couplets—

"In death I ſought new life to find,
"And health where pale diſtemper pin'd;
"I look'd for freedom in the goal,
"And faith where perjuries prevail:
"But Fate ſupreme, whoſe ſtern decree
"To ſorrow match'd my deſtiny,
"All poſſible relief withdrew,
"Becauſe th' impoſſible I kept in view."

'Next day Anſelmo went to the country, after having told Camilla, that in his abſence Lothario would take charge of the family, and dine with her every day; he therefore deſired her to treat him with all the reſpect due to his own perſon. Camilla, being a woman of honour and diſcretion, was diſguſted at this order, and bade him conſider how unſeemly it was for another man to ſit at the head of his table in his abſence; at the ſame time begging, that if his directions proceeded from his diffidence in her capacity, he would for once put her management to the trial, and be convinced, by experience, that ſhe was equal to a more important charge. Anſelmo replied, that ſuch was his pleaſure, and her province was to bow the head and obey; upon which, ſhe, though unwillingly, ſubmitted. Next day he ſet out accordingly, and Lothario went to his houſe, where he met with a very kind and honourable reception from Camilla, who never gave him an opportunity of being alone with her, but was always ſurrounded by her ſervants, generally attended by her own maid, whoſe name was Leonela, for whom her miſtreſs had a particular affection, becauſe they had been brought up together from their infancy, in the houſe of Camilla's parents; and when ſhe married Anſelmo, ſhe accompanied her to his houſe in quality of waiting-woman.

'During the firſt three days Lothario did not declare himſelf, although he had opportunities immediately after the table was uncovered, while the ſervants were at

at dinner, which Camilla always ordered them to finiſh with all expedition. Nay, ſhe gave directions to Leonela, to dine every day before the cloth was laid for herſelf, that ſhe might always be in waiting; but her maid's thoughts were too much engroſſed by her own amuſements, the enjoyment of which required ſuch time and opportunity, as often hindered her from obeying the commands of her miſtreſs, ſo that ſhe frequently behaved as if ſhe had received orders to leave them alone; but the dignified preſence of Camilla, the gravity of her countenance, and awfulneſs of perſon, were ſuch as effectually bridled Lothario's tongue: yet the energy of virtue, in having this very effect, redounded the more to the diſadvantage of them both; for, tho' his tongue was reſtricted, his thoughts had a full and free opportunity of contemplating at leiſure the charms both of her mind and her perſon, which were ſufficient to captivate not only an heart of fleſh, but even a ſtatue of ſtone.

'Lothario, by gazing at her during thoſe opportunities, beheld how worthy ſhe was to be beloved; and this conviction began gradually to ſap his regard for his friend, ſo that he made a thouſand reſolutions to quit the city, and go where he ſhould never more be ſeen by Anſelmo, or be expoſed to danger from the beauty of his wife; but all theſe were baffled by the pleaſure he had already felt, in ſeeing and admiring her charms; he conſtrained himſelf, and combated his own inclinations, in order to expel and efface that ſatisfaction: when he was alone he condemned his own madneſs, and reproached himſelf as a falſe friend and a worthleſs Chriſtian; he made a thouſand reflections and compariſons between himſelf and Anſelmo; and they all terminated in this concluſion, that the madneſs and raſh confidence of his friend greatly exceeded his own infidelity, and that if he could excuſe himſelf to Heaven, for what he intended to do, as eaſily as to mankind, he had no reaſon to dread any puniſhment for the crime. In ſhort, the beauty and other accompliſh-

ments of Camilla, together with the opportunity which the ignorant husband put into his hands, entirely overthrew the integrity of Lothario; who, giving way at once to the dictates of his passion, began at the end of three days, during which he had been at continual war with his desires, to address himself to Camilla with such disorder and amorous discourse, that she was utterly astonished, and rising up, went to her own chamber without answering one word. But this coyness did not abate Lothario's hope, which always increases with a man's love; on the contrary, he redoubled his efforts; while she, perceiving him behave so wide of expectation, did not well know what conduct to espouse; but, thinking it would be both unseemly and unsafe in her, to grant him another opportunity, she determined that very night to send a message to her husband, and actually dispatched a servant to him with the following letter.

CHAPTER VII.

The Continuation of the Novel called the Impertinent Curiosity.

"IT is a common observation, that an army without a general, and a garrison without a chief, make but a very indifferent appearance; but I say, that a young married woman without a husband makes a worse, especially when his absence is not the effect of absolute necessity: for my own part, I find myself so uneasy, and unable to support our separation, that if you do not return immediately, I must go and pass my time at my father's house, though I should leave yours without a guard; for I believe he that you left, if he was designed for that purpose, hath more regard to his own pleasure than to your advantage; and since you are wise, I have nothing more to say, nor is it proper I should."

'When Anselmo received this letter, he was convinced that Lothario had began the enterprize, and that his

his wife had behaved according to his wiſh; rejoiced beyond meaſure at this information, he anſwered by a verbal meſſage, that ſhe ſhould by no means leave the houſe, for he would return in a very little time. Camilla was aſtoniſhed at this reply, which perplexed her more than ever, as ſhe durſt neither ſtay in her own houſe, nor go to her father's; for, in ſtaying at home, ſhe endangered her honour, and in going to her parents ſhe tranſgreſſed the commands of her huſband. In fine, ſhe reſolved upon that which was worſt of all, namely, to remain where ſhe was; determined not to avoid Lothario, that the ſervants might not obſerve her ſituation; and ſhe was already ſorry for what ſhe had written to Anſelmo, being afraid he would imagine Lothario had perceived ſome levity in her conduct, which encouraged him to lay aſide the decorum he ought to have preſerved. Confident of her own virtue, ſhe truſted to God and her conſcious prudence, by the help of which ſhe thought ſhe could in ſilence reſiſt all the ſolicitations of Lothario without giving her huſband any further information, leſt it ſhould involve him in ſome trouble or dangerous diſpute; nay, ſhe was even induſtrious in inventing ſome excuſe for Lothario, in caſe Anſelmo ſhould aſk the reaſon that induced her to write ſuch a letter.

'With theſe ſentiments, which were more honourable than prudent and advantageous, ſhe next day ſat liſtening to Lothario, who exerted himſelf in ſuch a manner, as to ſhake her fortitude, which, with all her virtue, was barely ſufficient to hinder her eyes from giving manifeſt indications of the amorous compaſſion that his tears and addreſſes had awakened in her breaſt. All this tenderneſs, which Lothario obſerved, inflamed his paſſion the more; and thinking there was a neceſſity for ſhortening the ſiege, while this opportunity of Anſelmo's abſence laſted, he aſſaulted her pride with the praiſes of her beauty; for nothing ſooner ſucceeds in overthrowing the embattled towers of female vanity, than vanity itſelf, employed by the tongue of adulation;

tion: in ſhort, he ſo aſſiduouſly undermined the fortreſs of her virtue, and plied it with ſuch irreſiſtible engines, that though ſhe had been made of braſs, ſhe muſt have ſurrendered at mercy. He wept, intreated, promiſed, flattered, feigned, and importuned, with ſuch earneſt expreſſions of love, as conquered all her reſerve: at laſt he obtained a compleat triumph, which, though what he leaſt expected, was what of all things he moſt ardently deſired; ſhe yielded—the chaſte Camilla yielded! But what wonder? ſince even Lothario's friendſhip gave way: a clear and inconteſtible proof, that love is to be conquered by flight alone; and that no perſon whatever ought to engage ſuch a powerful adverſary hand to hand, becauſe nothing but force divine can ſubdue that human power.

'Leonela alone was privy to the weakneſs of her miſtreſs, which the two new lovers and falſe friends could not poſſibly conceal from her knowledge; and Lothario did not chuſe to tell Camilla the contrivance of Anſelmo, who had given him the opportunity of accompliſhing his deſign; that ſhe might not undervalue his love, by ſuppoſing that he courted her by accident, without being at firſt really enamoured of her charms. Anſelmo returning in a few days, did not perceive the loſs of that, which, though he preſerved with the leaſt care, he prized above all other poſſeſſions; but going in queſt of Lothario, whom he found in his own lodging, after a mutual embrace, he deſired he would tell him the news that muſt determine his life or death. "The news which I have to give to you, my friend," ſaid Lothario, "are theſe; you have a wife who truly deſerves to be the pattern and queen of all good women. The expreſſions I uſed to her were ſpent in the air, my promiſes were deſpiſed, my preſents rejected, and ſome tears that I feigned moſt heartily ridiculed; in ſhort, Camilla is the ſum of all beauty, and the caſket in which are depoſited honour, affability, modeſty, and all the qualifications that dignify and adorn a woman of virtue. Here, take back your money, which I have had

had no occaſion to uſe; the chaſtity of your ſpouſe is not to be ſhaken by ſuch mean conſiderations as thoſe of promiſes and preſents; be ſatisfied, Anſelmo, and make no more unprofitable trials; ſince you have dryſhod croſſed the ſea of thoſe doubts and ſuſpicions which are and may be entertained of women, ſeek not to plunge yourſelf anew into the dangerous gulf of freſh difficulties, by uſing another pilot to make a ſecond trial of the ſtrength and tightneſs of the veſſel which you have received from Heaven to perform the voyage of this life, but conſider yourſelf as in a ſafe harbour, where you ought to ſecure yourſelf with the anchor of ſound reflection, and remain until you are called upon to pay that tax from which no human rank can exempt you."

'Anſelmo was infinitely rejoiced at this information of Lothario, which he believed as implicitly as if it had been pronounced by an oracle; but, nevertheleſs, he beſought him to continue his addreſſes, merely for curioſity and amuſement, though not with the ſame eagerneſs and diligence which he had uſed before; he deſired him to write verſes in praiſe of Camilla, under the name Chloris, promiſing to tell his wife, that he, Lothario, was in love with a lady whom he celebrated under that fictitious name, in order to preſerve the decorum due to her character; and he aſſured him, that if Lothario did not chuſe to take the trouble of making verſes, he himſelf would compoſe them for the occaſion. "You ſhall not need," ſaid Lothario; "the muſes are not quite ſo averſe, but they viſit me ſometimes: you may tell Camilla what you have mentioned, concerning my pretended love; and as for the verſes, if not adequate to the ſubject, they ſhall at all events be the beſt I can make."

'This agreement being concerted between the impertinent huſband and treacherous friend, Anſelmo returned to his own houſe, and aſked Camilla, what ſhe wondered he had not mentioned before; namely, the meaning of that letter which ſhe had diſpatched to him in the country. She anſwered, that ſhe then fancied

Lothario

Lothario looked at her with more freedom then he used to take when Anselmo was at home: but now she was undeceived, and convinced of it's being no more than mere imagination, for he had of late avoided all occasions of being alone with her. Anselmo said she might make herself entirely easy from that quarter; for he knew that Lotharío was in love with a lady of fashion in the city, whom he celebrated under the name of Chloris; and even, if he was free of any such engagements, there was nothing to be feared from the honour of Lothario, and the friendship subsisting between them. If Camilla had not been previously advertised by her secret gallant, of this supposed love of Chloris, with which he intended to hoodwink her husband, that he might sometimes indulge himself in her own praise under the cover of that name, she would, without doubt, have been distracted with jealousy; but thus instructed, she heard him without surprize or concern.

'Next day, while they where at dinner, Anselmo intreated his friend to repeat some of the verses he had composed in praise of Chloris, who being utterly unknown to Camilla, he might securely say what he pleased. "Though she were of her acquaintance," answered Lothario, "I should not think myself bound to conceal my passion; for, when a lover praises the beauty, and at the same time bewails the cruelty of his mistress, her reputation can suffer no prejudice; but, be that as it will, I own, I yesterday wrote a song on the ingratitude of Chloris, which you shall hear.

I.

"When night extends her silent reign,
"And sleep vouchsafes the world to bless,
"To Heav'n and Chloris I complain
"Of dire and affluent distress.

II.

"When Phœbus, led by rosy morn,
"At first, his radiant visage shews,
"With tears, and sighs, and groans forlorn,
"My soul the bitter plaint renews.

III. "When

III.

" When from his bright meridian throne,
" The dazzling rays descend amain,
" With aggravated grief I moan,
" And night brings back the woeful strain.
" Thus to my vows and prayers I find
" My Chloris deaf, and Heav'n unkind."

" The song was approved by Camilla, and much more so by her husband, who applauded it to the skies, and observed, that the lady must be excessively cruel, who could resist such a true and pathetic complaint. " What!" said Camilla, " is every thing true that we are told by the poets when they are in love?"— " What they rehearse as poets," answered Lothario, " is not always truth; but what they affirm as lovers, is always from the heart." " You are certainly in the right," replied Anselmo, with a view of supporting and giving sanction to Lothario's sentiments, in the opinion of Camilla, whose indifference about her husband's artifice was now equal to her love for his pretended friend. Pleased therefore with his performances, because she very well knew that his inclinations and compositions were inspired by and addressed to her, who was the true Chloris, she desired him, if he had any more songs or verses, to repeat them. " I have another," said Lothario, " but I believe it is not so good; or, rather, it is less tolerable than the last. However, you shall judge for yourself; here it is.

I.

" Yes, cruel maid! I welcome death,
" And tho' I perish undeplor'd,
" Thy beauty with my latest breath
" Shall be applauded and ador'd.

II.

" Tho' lost in dark oblivion's shade,
" Bereft of favour, life, and fame,
" My faithful heart, when open laid,
" Will shew thine image and thy name.

III.

"These reliques I preserve with care,
"My comfort in disastrous fate;
"For, steel'd and whetted by despair,
"My love new force acquires from hate.
"Unhappy those! who, darkling, sail
"Where stars, and ports, and pilots fail."

'This song was commended as much as the first, by Anselmo, who in this manner added link to link of the chain with which he enslaved himself, and secured his own dishonour; for then Lothario disgraced him most, when he thought himself most honoured, and every step that Camilla descended towards the very center of contempt, she, in the opinion of her husband, mounted to the very summit of virtuous reputation. About this time, happening to be alone with her maid, "I am ashamed, dear Leonela," said she, "when I consider how I have undervalued myself; for I ought to have made Lothario employ a great deal of time in purchasing the entire possession of my favours, which I so willingly surrendered at once; and I am afraid that he will look upon my sudden yielding as the effect of levity, without reflecting upon the violence of his own addresses, which it was impossible to resist."—"Let not that give you the least disturbance, Madam," answered Leonela, "for there is no reason why a thing should lose it's estimation, by being freely given, if it is actually good in its kind and worthy of esteem; nay, it is a common saying, That he who gives freely, gives twice." "There is also another common observation," replied Camilla, "That which is easily got is little valued." "You are not at all affected by that observation," resumed Leonela, "for love, they say, sometimes flies, sometimes walks, runs with one, creeps with another, warms a third, burns a fourth, wounding some, and slaying others. In one moment it begins, performs, and concludes it's career; lays

lays siege in the morning to a fortress, which is surrendered before night, there being no fortress that can withstand it's power. This being the case, what cause have you to be alarmed or afraid? This was the power that assisted Lothario, by making use of my master's absence, as the instrument of his success; and what love had determined, must of necessity have been concluded during that period, before Anselmo could, by his return, prevent the perfection of the work. Opportunity is the best minister for executing the designs of love; and is employed in all his undertakings, especially in the beginning of them. This I know to be true, more by experience than hearsay; and I shall one day tell you, Madam, that I am a girl of flesh and blood, as well as your ladyship. Besides, your ladyship did not yield until you had discerned in the looks, sighs, protestations, promises, and presents of Lothario, his whole soul undisguised, and adorned with such virtues as rendered him worthy of your love. Let not, therefore, these scrupulous and whining reflections harrass your imagination; but assure yourself, that Lothario's love and yours are mutual: so that you may think yourself extremely happy, in being caught in the amorous snare by a man of worth and honour, who not only possesses the four qualities beginning with S*, which ought to be the case of all true lovers, but also a whole alphabet of accomplishments. Listen, and you shall hear how cleverly I will recount them. He is, in my simple opinion, amiable, benevolent, courageous, diverting, enamoured, firm, gay, honourable, illustrious, loyal, mettlesome, noble, obedient, princely, qualified, rich, and the S. S. as I have already observed. Then, he is trusty, vigilant; the X does not suit him, because it is a harsh letter; Y stands for youth, and Z for zeal, in his attachment to you."

* *Sensato, secreto, sobrepusado, senzero;* Sensible, secret, surpassing, and sincere.

'Camilla laughed at the alphabet of her maid, whom ſhe found more knowing in the affairs of love than ſhe pretended to be; and this knowledge indeed, ſhe confeſſed, diſcloſing to her miſtreſs an intrigue that ſhe carried on with a young man of a good family in town. Camilla was diſturbed at this information, fearing that her honour ran ſome riſk from their correſpondence; and when ſhe preſſed her to confeſs, whether or not it had been brought to the laſt extremity, ſhe, without the leaſt ſymptom of ſhame, anſwered in the affirmative: for, it is very certain, that the failings of miſtreſſes diveſt their ſervants of all modeſty; becauſe, ſeeing their ladies trip, they think themſelves intitled to halt, without being at the trouble to conceal their defect. Camilla, thus circumſtanced, could fall upon no other expedient than that of cautioning her maid againſt betraying her to the perſon who was her gallant, and beſeeching her to keep her own intrigue ſecret, that it might not fall under the obſervation of Anſelmo and Lothario.

'Leonela promiſed to be upon her guard, but managed her affairs with ſo little diſcretion, that ſhe confirmed Camilla in the apprehenſion of loſing her reputation by the careleſſneſs of her maid; for the bold and immodeſt Leonela, ſeeing that her lady's conduct was not the ſame as formerly, had the aſſurance to introduce and conceal her lover in the houſe, conſcious, that although her miſtreſs ſhould perceive, ſhe durſt not detect him in that ſituation. Among other diſadvantages incurred by the ſlips of women of faſhion, they become ſlaves to their own ſervants, and find themſelves obliged to connive at their impudence and vice.

'This was the very caſe of Camilla, who, though ſhe more than once obſerved Leonela engaged with her gallant, in one of the chambers, far from reprimanding her on that ſcore, ſhe gave opportunities of concealing him, and did all ſhe could to prevent his being ſeen by her huſband. But all their caution could not

ſcreen

ſcreen him from the notice of Lothario; who, perceiving him come out of the houſe one morning at break of day, and not knowing who he was, at firſt miſtook him for a phantom; but ſeeing him run away, and ſeek to hide himſelf with care and concern, he ſoon changed that ſimple opinion for another, which would have ruined them all, had not Camilla found out an expedient to prevent their deſtruction. He was ſo far from thinking, that this man, whom he ſaw coming out of Anſelmo's houſe at ſuch an unſeaſonable hour, had gone in on Leonela's account, that he did not even remember there was ſuch a perſon in the world; on the contrary, he was firmly perſuaded, that Camilla, who yielded ſo eaſily to his addreſſes, had acted in the ſame manner to ſome other perſon; for this additional miſfortune attends a looſe woman, that ſhe loſes her credit even with the man by whoſe importunities and intreaties her honour was ſubdued. Nay, he believes, that ſhe will be more eaſily won by another than by him, and implicitly credits every ſuſpicion that may ariſe from that unjuſt inference. On this occaſion, Lothario's good ſenſe failed, and all his caution ſeemed to vaniſh; ſince, regardleſs of every thing that was right or reaſonable, without farther examination, he hied him to Anſelmo before he was up, where, impatient and blind with the jealous fury that preyed upon his entrails, and inflamed with the deſire of being revenged upon Camilla, who had given him no offence, he expreſſed himſelf thus.

"You muſt know, Anſelmo, that for ſome days paſt, I have had a continual ſtruggle with myſelf, endeavouring to ſuppreſs that which I no longer either can or ought to conceal from your knowledge. The fortreſs of Camilla is, at laſt ſurrendered, and ſubmitted entirely to the dominion of my will. This I have delayed imparting to you, until I ſhould be certain whether her compliance was owing to ſome tranſient flaſh of affection, or to the deſire of trying the ſincerity of thoſe addreſſes which, by your own direction, were carried

carried on; and I likewife concluded, that if fhe was a woman of honour and virtue, as we both imagined, fhe would ere now have given you an account of my folicitation. But finding that ftill undone, I take it for granted fhe means to keep her promife of giving me an interview in the wardrobe the very next time you go to the country; (and here it was where Camilla actually ufed to entertain him;) but I fhould not wifh that you would run precipitately into any fcheme of vengeance. However, as the crime is committed in thought only, before an opportunity offers of performing that promife, Camilla may change her mind, and repent of her weaknefs. Wherefore, as you have hitherto, in whole or in part, followed my advice, I hope you will treafure up and obferve one which I fhall now offer, that you may, without the leaft poffibility of being deceived, carefully and cautioufly fatisfy yourfelf, fo as to take fuch meafures as your prudence fhall fuggeft. You may pretend that you are going, as ufual, for two or three days to the country, and in the mean time conceal yourfelf in the wardrobe, where you will find tapeftry and plenty of other things for the purpofe; from thence you, with your own eyes, as I with mine, will obferve the conduct of Camilla, and if unhappily you fhould find more caufe to fear than to hope, you may in perfon revenge your own wrongs, with filence, fafety, and difcretion."

'Anfelmo was thunderftruck at this declaration of Lothario, which came upon him when he leaft expected it; for he already looked upon Camilla as a conqueror in the fictitious affaults of his friend, and had actually began to enjoy the glory of her triumph. After having ftood filent for a long time, with his eyes fixed upon the ground, "Lothario," faid he, "you have acted up to the expectation of my friendfhip: I will adhere to your advice in every thing; do what you pleafe; I hope you will keep this unexpected affair as fecret as the nature of it requires."

'His

'His falſe friend promiſed to obſerve the caution; but ſoon as he quitted the apartment, repented of every thing he had ſaid, reflecting how fooliſhly he had proceeded, and that he might have puniſhed Camilla by means leſs cruel and diſhonourable. He curſed his own folly, condemned his precipitation, and endeavoured to find out ſome expedient to undo what he had done, or at leaſt bring it to ſome favourable iſſue. At length, he reſolved to diſcloſe the whole to Camilla, as there wanted not opportunities of being with her alone; and that very day being together, ſhe made uſe of the firſt that happened, addreſſing herſelf to him in this manner. "Know, my dear Lothario, that my heart is ready to burſt with one affliction, which is ſo grievous that it will be a wonder if I ſurvive it: Leonela is arrived to ſuch a pitch of impudence, that every night ſhe introduces a gallant into the houſe, and remains with him till morning, very much at the expence of my reputation, as the field is left open for any malicious conſtruction, upon ſeeing a man come out of my houſe at ſuch unſeaſonable hours; and the misfortune is, I dare neither chide nor chaſtiſe her for her audacity; for her being privy to our correſpondence puts a bridle in my mouth, obliging me to be ſilent on the ſubject of her folly, from which I fear ſome miſchance will befal us."

'When Camilla began this diſcourſe, Lothario imagined it was an artifice to deceive and perſuade him that the man he had ſeen coming out of the houſe had been there on Leonela's account only; but, ſeeing his miſtreſs weep, and in the utmoſt affection entreat him to find out ſome remedy for this inconvenience, he was convinced of the truth, and covered with ſhame and remorſe for what he had done; nevertheleſs, he deſired Camilla to make herſelf eaſy, and promiſed to fall upon ſome method to curb Leonela's inſolence. He then told her what, inſtigated by the rage of jealouſy, he had diſcloſed to Anſelmo, who, by his appointment, was to conceal himſelf in the wardrobe, that he might have an

an inconteſtible proof of her infidelity: he begged pardon for his madneſs, with advice how to remedy it, and to extricate himſelf from the labyrinth in which he was involved by his own imprudence. Camilla was aſtoniſhed at the diſcourſe of Lothario, whom ſhe chid and reprimanded with great reaſon and reſentment, for the groundleſs ſuſpicion which had driven him to ſuch a mad and miſchievous reſolution; but women having naturally more invention than men can boaſt of, either for a good or bad occaſion, though ſometimes they fail in premeditated ſchemes, Camilla inſtantly thought of a cure for this ſeemingly incurable dilemma, and bade Lothario prevail upon her huſband to conceal himſelf in the appointed place the very next day; for ſhe hoped to reap ſuch advantage from his concealment, as that for the future they ſhould enjoy each other without the leaſt fear or interruption. She, therefore, without diſcloſing to her lover the whole of her plan, deſired him to take care, when Anſelmo was hid, to come at Leonela's call, and anſwer every queſtion ſhe ſhould aſk, in the ſame manner as he would reply if he did not know that her huſband was within hearing. Lothario inſiſted upon knowing the particulars of her ſcheme, that he might with more ſecurity and ſucceſs perform his cue; but Camilla aſſured him he had nothing to do but anſwer her queſtions with truth and ſincerity; being unwilling to make him previouſly acquainted with her deſign, leſt he ſhould diſapprove of that which to her ſeemed ſo neceſſary, and recommend another which perhaps ſhe might not think ſo effectual. Accordingly, Lothario took his leave; and next day Anſelmo, under pretence of going to his friend's country-houſe, ſet out, but ſoon returned to his hiding-place; Camilla and her maid having purpoſely given him an opportunity of getting in unſeen. There he remained in a ſtate of perturbation, which may be eaſily conceived to harraſs the breaſt of a man who expected to ſee with his own eyes the bowels of his honour diſſected, and found himſelf

ſelf on the brink of loſing that ſupreme bliſs which he thought he poſſeſſed in his beloved Camilla.

'She and her maid, by this time, certified of his being there, went to the wardrobe, which Camilla no ſooner entered, than heaving a profound ſigh, "Dear Leonela," ſaid ſhe, "rather than execute the deſign which I conceal from your knowledge, that you may not endeavour to prevent it, would it not be better for you to take this poignard of Anſelmo, and plunge it in my unfortunate boſom? Yet do not, Leonela; for it were unreaſonable that I ſhould be puniſhed for another's crime; I want firſt to know what the daring and licentious eyes of Lothario have diſcerned in my conduct, that ſhould encourage him to declare a paſſion ſo guilty as that which he hath owned, ſo much to my diſhonour and the prejudice of his friend. Go to that window, Leonela, and beckon to him, for doubtleſs he is now in the ſtreet, expecting to ſucceed in his wicked intention; but I ſhall firſt execute mine, which is equally honourable and ſevere." "Alas, Madam!" anſwered the cunning and well-inſtructed Leonela, "how do you intend to uſe that fatal poignard? are you determined to take away your own life, or that of Lothario? by ſacrificing either the one or the other, you will entirely ruin your own reputation. You ſhould rather ſtifle your wrongs, than give that wicked wretch an opportunity of finding us here alone: conſider, Madam, that we are but weak women, and he a determined man, who, blinded by his guilty paſſion, may by force deprive you of that which you value more than life, before you can execute your purpoſe upon him. A plague upon my maſter Anſelmo, for allowing that impudent fellow to be ſo free in his houſe! beſides, Madam, ſhould you kill him, as I believe you intend to do, what ſhall we do with him after he is dead?"— "Nothing, my friend," 'replied Camilla, "but let Anſelmo bury him; for he ought to take pleaſure in the taſk of interring his own infamy. Go, and beckon to him, I ſay, for every moment I delay my juſt revenge,

ſeems

ſeems to injure afreſh that fidelity which I owe to my huſband."

'All this converſation was overheard by Anſelmo, whoſe ſentiments were entirely changed by what Camilla ſaid; and when he underſtood that ſhe intended to kill Lothario, he was inclined to come out and diſcover himſelf, in order to prevent the deed; but he was diverted from that reſolution by the deſire of ſeeing the iſſue of his wife's gallant and virtuous determination; purpoſing, however, to appear ſeaſonably enough for the ſafety of his friend.

'About this time Camilla, throwing herſelf upon a couch, was ſeized with a violent fit, during which Leonela wept bitterly, exclaiming, "Ah! woe is me! muſt I then ſee, expiring in theſe unfortunate arms, the flower of human virtue, the queen of excellent wives, the pattern of chaſtity!" with other epithets of the ſame kind, which nobody could have heard, without eſteeming her the moſt faithful and afflicted damſel upon earth, and her miſtreſs another perſecuted Penelope. Camilla, having ſoon recovered from her fit, ſaid to her woman, "Why don't you go and call this the moſt faithful friend that ever was ſeen by the day, or ſhrouded by the night? Make haſte; go, run, fly: let not the fire of my rage be conſumed by your delay, and the juſt vengeance I mean to take evaporate in curſes and unſubſtantial threats." "I go," anſwered Leonela, "but you muſt firſt give me that poignard, leſt, in my abſence, you do a deed to make all thoſe who love you weep to the end of their lives." "Go, dear Leonela," replied her miſtreſs, "and fear nothing; for although, in your opinion, I may be raſh and even unreaſonable, in thus reſenting the affront upon my honour; I ſhall not behave like that Lucretia, who, 'tis ſaid, killed herſelf, though innocent, without having firſt puniſhed the villainous cauſe of her misfortune. If I muſt die, I will at leaſt fall fully revenged of him who is the occaſion of my being here, to bewail his

audacious

audacious behaviour, which, I am ſure, proceeded from no miſconduct of mine."

'Many intreaties did ſhe uſe, before Leonela would go and call Lothario, but at length ſhe prevailed; the maid went out to ſeek him, and, in her abſence, Camilla uttered the following ſoliloquy. "Good Heaven! would it not have been more prudent to diſmiſs Lothario as uſual, than to give him this occaſion of thinking me vicious and immodeſt, even though that opinion can only laſt until I have an opportunity of undeceiving him? Yes, certainly; but I ſhall not think myſelf revenged, nor the honour of my huſband ſufficiently vindicated, if he eſcapes ſo ſmooth and clean from this ſnare into which his wicked inclinations have decoyed him. Let the traitor pay with his life for the enterprize of his laſcivious deſire; the world ſhall know, if even the affair be made publick, that Camilla not only preſerved her affection for her huſband inviolate, but alſo took vengeance on the man who thought to impair it. Yet, methinks, I ought to diſcloſe the whole to Anſelmo; but I have already touched upon the ſubject, in the letter I ſent to him when he was in the country; and his omitting to apply a remedy to the evil I then hinted at, muſt certainly be owing to his own integrity and unſuſpecting heart, which would not ſuffer him to believe, that the breaſt of ſuch a conſtant friend could harbour one thought to the prejudice of his honour; indeed, this was my own opinion, until his behaviour became intolerably licentious, and his preſents, promiſes, and tears, fully manifeſted his guilty purpoſe. But, wherefore theſe reflections? does a gallant reſolution ſtand in need of heſitating advice? No! traitor, avaunt! hither vengeance! enter, thou falſe, perfidious wretch, come, quick, be ſpeedy, die, and let the conſequence be what it will! Pure and unſpotted I came into the poſſeſſion of him whom Heaven appointed to be my huſband and my lord, and equally pure ſhall I leave his embrace, though bathed in my own chaſte blood,

and embrued in the tainted gore of the falſeſt friend that ever friendſhip ſaw?" So ſaying, ſhe brandiſhed the drawn dagger in her hand, and ſtalked acroſs the room with ſuch diſordered ſteps and violent geſtures, that ſhe ſeemed to have loſt her ſenſes, and looked more like a deſperate ruffian than a delicate wife.

'All this tranſport and agitation was perceived, with aſtoniſhment, by Anſelmo, where he ſtood concealed behind the tapeſtry; he thought he had now ſeen and heard enough to diſpel ſuſpicions of a ſtronger kind than thoſe he entertained; and even wiſhed that the proof might proceed no farther, by Lothario's failing to keep the appointment; for he was afraid that ſome ſudden unlucky accident might happen. Being therefore on the point of ſhewing himſelf, and running to embrace and undeceive his wife, he was prevented by ſeeing Leonela return with his friend, whom Camilla no ſooner beheld, than drawing a line before her, with the dagger, ſhe ſaid, Take notice, Lothario, if you attempt to paſs this line, or even approach it, the moment I perceive your intention, I will plunge the poignard in my breaſt. Without offering the leaſt reply, therefore, to this declaration, I deſire you will liſten to ſome queſtions I mean to aſk, which you may anſwer as you ſhall think proper. In the firſt place, tell me, Lothario, if you know my huſband Anſelmo, and what ſtation he maintains in your opinion? and then be as explicit in your ſentiments of me. Anſwer without perturbation or difficulty, for the queſtions I aſk are eaſily ſolved."

'Lothario was not ſo ignorant, but that he had conceived her deſign, from the moment of her deſiring him to adviſe Anſelmo to conceal himſelf; and therefore his replies were ſo ſeaſonable, and correſponded ſo exactly with her aim, that this fiction had all the air of the moſt genuine truth. "Beauteous Camilla," ſaid he, "I did not imagine you had ſent for me with a view of aſking queſtions ſo foreign to the purpoſe for which I come; if you meant to delay the promiſed

bliſs,

bliſs, you might have protracted the aſſignation to a more diſtant term; for, the nearer the proſpect of enjoyment is, the more grievous will the diſappointment be: but that you may have no cauſe to complain of my refuſing to anſwer your demands, I will own that I know your huſband Anſelmo, with whom I have been intimate from our moſt tender years. Of the friendſhip (as you know) ſubſiſting between us, I will ſay nothing, that I may not bear witneſs to the wrong which love, the powerful excuſe of greater crimes, compels me to commit: you too I know, and rate as high as you can poſſibly be in his eſteem; for a prize of leſs value I ſhould not have acted ſo unbecoming my own character, or tranſgreſſed thoſe laws of perfect friendſhip, which I have broken and violated, at the inſtigation of that miſchievous and irreſiſtible power."

"Since thou art ſelf-convicted ſo far," replied Camilla, "thou mortal enemy to all that merits love! with what face dareſt thou appear before her who is the mirror that reflects him, and in which thou oughteſt to have ſeen how little reaſon and encouragement thou hadſt to wrong his honour; but, unfortunate that I am! I have found out the cauſe that induced thee to forget thyſelf ſo far; it muſt have been ſome lightneſs of carriage in me; immodeſty I will not call it, becauſe it could not be the effect of deliberate determination, but muſt have proceeded from a neglect of ſome of thoſe forms which women often inadvertently omit before thoſe whom they think they can entertain without ceremony. Otherwiſe, tell me, traitor, when did I ever anſwer thy addreſſes with any word or ſign that could awaken in thy breaſt the leaſt glimpſe of hope to accompliſh thy infamous aim? Did I not always reject and reprove thy amorous proteſtations with rigour and ſeverity? and when were thy promiſes and preſents believed and accepted? But, as I think no perſon could long perſevere in ſuch a flagitious intention, without being ſupported by ſome ſort of

of hope, I am willing to lay the blame of your impertinence at my own door; ſince, without doubt, ſome failure of care in me hath enabled you to exert yours ſo long; and therefore, I will inflict upon myſelf the puniſhment that your crime deſerves; but that you may ſee, in being thus inhuman to myſelf, it was impoſſible for me to deal mildly by you, I have invited you hither, to be witneſs of the ſacrifice I mean to offer to the injured honour of my noble huſband, whom you have aggrieved to the utmoſt of your power, I myſelf being acceſſary to the wrong, becauſe I have not induſtriouſly enough avoided all occaſion, if I gave you any, of favouring and countenancing your wicked inclinations. I ſay, the ſuſpicion I have, that ſome levity of mine engendered ſuch frantick ſentiments in your boſom, gives me the utmoſt pain, and prompts me to chaſtiſe my indiſcretion with my own hands, rather than make my fault more publick, by ſubmitting to another executioner; but, if I muſt periſh, my fall ſhall be accompanied with the death of him whoſe blood will ſatisfy the vengeance which I already in ſome meaſure enjoy, when I conſider that whereſoever I go, I ſhall have before mine eyes, the victim I offered to the moſt diſintereſted juſtice, in puniſhing the wretch who hath reduced me to this deſpair."

'So ſaying, ſhe aſſaulted Lothario with incredible force and agility, manifeſting ſuch eagerneſs to plunge the poignard in his breaſt, that he himſelf doubted whether her endeavours were feigned or real; and was actually obliged to exert his whole ſtrength in defending himſelf from Camilla, who acted this ſtrange impoſture ſo much to the life, that, in order to give it the greater appearance of truth, ſhe reſolved to colour it with her own blood; for ſeeing, or feigning, that ſhe could not touch Lothario, ſhe cried, "though fate denies me the full ſatisfaction of my juſt deſire, it cannot rob me of one part of my revenge." With theſe words, ſtruggling to diſengage her dagger-hand, which was held by Lothario, ſhe at laſt ſucceeded, and directing her poignard

poignard to a part of her body, which ſhe thought ſhe might ſlightly wound without danger, ſhe ſheathed it between her ſhoulder and left-breaſt, and fell upon the floor as in a ſwoon.

'Leonela and Lothario were aſtoniſhed and confounded at this event, and ſtill dubious whether or not Camilla was in earneſt, when they ſaw her ſtretched upon the ground, and bathed in her own blood. Lothario ran, in the utmoſt fright and conſternation, to draw forth the dagger; but perceiving what a ſuperficial wound ſhe had made, he recovered of the terror which had began to ſeize him, and could not help admiring anew, the uncommon ſagacity, prudence, and diſcretion, of the beautiful Camilla: that he might therefore proceed in the part he had to act, he began to make long and ſorrowful lamentations over the body, as if ſhe had been really dead, imprecating a thouſand curſes, not only upon himſelf, but alſo upon him who was the original cauſe of this diſaſter; and as he knew that Anſelmo was liſtening, ſaid ſuch melancholy things, that whoſoever had heard him, would have pitied his caſe, as much as that of Camilla, though they had believed her actually dead.

'Leonela lifted her up, and laying her on the bed, earneſtly intreated Lothario to find ſome perſon who would cure her privately; and begged he would adviſe her, with regard to what ſhe ſhould tell Anſelmo, about her lady's wound, in caſe he ſhould return before ſhe was cured. He ſaid ſhe might tell him what ſhe pleaſed, for he was then in no condition to give any profitable advice about the matter; he only deſired her to fall upon ſome method of ſtaunching the blood, and declared that for his own part he would go where man ſhould never ſee him. He accordingly departed with the appearance of infinite grief and anxiety; and when he found himſelf alone, in a private place, croſſed himſelf with amazement at the invention of Camilla, and the artful behaviour of her maid. He could eaſily conceive that Anſelmo was

by this time thoroughly convinced of his having a second Portia for his wife; and was impatient to see him, that they might together extol her behaviour, which, though imposture, had more the appearance of truth than any thing of the same kind that ever been practised.

Leonela, as she was desired, stopped her lady's blood, of which there was just enough to give credit to her artifice; and washing the wound with a little wine, bound it up as well as she could, uttering such sorrowful expressions all the time, as would have been sufficient, without any previous lamentation, to persuade Anselmo that his wife was the mirror of chastity. Leonela's complaints were joined by those of her mistress, who taxed herself with cowardice and pusillanimity, in having lost the best opportunity she should ever have of parting with that life which she abhorred. She consulted her maid about disclosing the whole affair to her beloved spouse; but this scheme Leonela opposed, observing that it would lay her master under an obligation of taking vengeance on Lothario; a satisfaction he could not enjoy without exposing himself to great danger; and that a virtuous woman, far from seeking to involve her husband in quarrels, was in duty bound to keep him free of all such disputes, by every method in her power. Camilla seemed to approve of her maid's prudence, and promised to follow her advice; but said it would be necessary, at all events, to invent some excuse to Anselmo about the wound, which he could not fail of observing. Leonela assuring her, that she could never tell a lye even in jest, the mistress replied, "What shall I do then, child? for I would not attempt to frame and maintain a falshood, even though my life depended upon it: since, therefore, we know not how to extricate ourselves otherwise, we must e'en discover the naked truth, rather than run the risk of being detected in a lye."—"Don't give yourself any farther uneasiness, Madam," said Leonela; "by to-morrow morning I shall have found some expedient;

pedient; perhaps the wound being where it is, may be concealed from his view, and Heaven vouchsafe to favour our upright and honourable intention. Compose yourself, dear Madam; endeavour to calm the perturbation of your spirits, that my master may not perceive your disorder, and leave the consequence to my care and that of Heaven, which never fails to favour the righteous design."

'Anselmo listened with the utmost attention to this tragedy of the death of his honour, which was represented with such exquisite and surprizing address, that the actors seemed really transformed into the very characters they feigned; he longed impatiently for night, and an opportunity of escaping unseen, that he might fly to his worthy friend Lothario, and receive his congratulation upon the precious jewel he had found in this vindication of his wife's virtue: they took care to furnish him with the occasion he wanted; and he, without letting it slip, ran immediately in quest of Lothario. It would be difficult to describe the eagerness of his embraces at meeting, or to recount the expressions he used in the overflowings of his satisfaction, and the extravagant praises he bestowed on Camilla. All these Lothario heard, without being able to manifest the least sign of joy; his reflections taxed him with the deceit he had practised, and the injury he had done his unsuspecting friend. Anselmo took notice that he did not seem to participate in his pleasure, but believed his concern proceeded from the thoughts of having been the occasion of Camilla's wound: he therefore, among other things, told him to make himself easy on that score, for the hurt must certainly have been very slight, as they had agreed to conceal it from his knowledge; and since there was no bad consequence to be apprehended, he hoped for the future to enjoy, in mirth and good-humour, the friendship of his dear Lothario, by whose industry and mediation he now saw himself raised to the most sublime pitch of human felicity; at the same time he signified, that his desire and

and deſign was to purſue no other amuſement than that of compoſing verſes in praiſe of Camilla, that ſhould tranſmit to the lateſt poſterity the remembrance of her worth.

'Lothario commended his laudable determination, and promiſed to contribute all that lay in his power towards the rearing of ſuch an illuſtrious edifice; ſo that Anſelmo being the moſt agreeably deceived of any man that ever lived, led by the hand to his own houſe, the very man who, though in his opinion the inſtrument of his glory, was the total perdition of his fame. Camilla received him with a countenance expreſſing reſentment, but a ſoul brimful of joy; and their ſecret correſpondence continued uninterrupted for a few months, at the end of which the wheel of fortune having performed a full circle, the intrigue, which had been hitherto ſo artfully concealed, was diſcovered, and Anſelmo's Impertinent Curioſity coſt him his life.'

CHAP. VIII.

The Concluſion of the Impertinent Curioſity.

A Little more of this novel remained to be read, when Sancho came running in great confuſion, from the garret where his maſter Don Quixote lay, bawling aloud, 'Come hither, gentlemen! make haſte to the aſſiſtance of my maſter, who is this precious minute engaged and grappled in the tougheſt battle that ever my eyes beheld! Egad, he has given that ſame giant, the enemy to my Lady the princeſs of Micomicona, ſuch a back ſtroke, as hath ſliced off his head as ſmooth and clean as the ſkin of a turnip.'— 'What do you mean, brother!' ſaid the curate, cloſing the book; 'are you in your right wits, Sancho? How the devil can your maſter be fighting with a giant who is two thouſand leagues from hence?'

That inſtant they heard a great noiſe in the apartment, and Don Quixotte proclaiming aloud, 'Stay, villain! robber! caitiff! here I have thee, and thy ſcymitar ſhall not avail.' Then he began to ſtrike furiouſly

riously at the walls; and Sancho exclaimed, ' Don't stand here listening, but go in and part the fray, or lend your assistance to my master, though I believe that will be needless by this time, for the giant is certainly dead, and giving an account to God of his wicked and mispent life: nay, I saw, with my own eyes, his blood running about the floor, and his head cut off, laying on one side, as a large wine bag.'—' May I be hanged,' cried the innkeeper, at these words, ' if this Don Quixote, or Don Devil, has not cut open one of the skins filled with red wine, that stood at his bed's head, and the wine that ran out is mistaken by this simple fellow for blood!'

So saying, he rushed into the apartment with the whole company at his heels, and found the knight in a very ludicrous situation; he appeared in his shirt, which was too scanty before to cover his thighs, and still shorter behind, by six inches at least, and displayed a pair of long lank legs, inbrowned with hair, and not extremely clean; his head was covered with a little, red, greasy night-cap, belonging to the landlord; round his left-arm he had wrapped the blanket of his bed, to which Sancho, for good reasons known to himself, bore an inveterate grudge; and in his right, he wielded his drawn sword, with which he laid about him at a furious rate, talking as if he was actually at blows with the giant; but, what was very surprizing, his eyes were shut all the time, and he was fast asleep, dreaming of this encounter; for his imagination was so much engrossed by the adventure he had undertaken to atchieve, as to make him dream that he was already arrived in the kingdom of Micomicon, and engaged in single combat with his gigantick adversary; instead of whom, he hacked the wine-bags so furiously, that the whole room was afloat with their contents.

The innkeeper no sooner perceived this havock, than incensed to the last degree, he assaulted Don Quixote with his clenched fists, and began to pummel him so severely, that if the curate and Cardenio had not inter-

posed,

poſed, he would ſoon have put an end to the adventure of the giant; yet, for all that, the poor knight did not awake until the barber, fetching a kettle of cold water from the well, ſouſed him all over: even then, though ſleep forſook him, he did not recollect the ſituation he was in; and Dorothea, ſeeing him ſo ſlight and airily equipped, did not chuſe to be a ſpectator of the combat between her adverſary and protector. Meanwhile Sancho went about the room, prying into every corner, and ſearching for the giant's head; which, when he could not find, 'I know,' ſaid he, 'that every thing goes by inchantment in this houſe: the laſt time I was in this very ſpot, I received a great many thwacks and thumps without ſeeing a ſoul, or being able to gueſs from whence they came; and now this head is vaniſhed, though I ſaw it cut off with mine own eyes, and the blood ſpout out of the body, like water from a fountain.' 'What! doſt thou talk of blood and fountains, thou enemy of God and his ſaints!' cried the inn-keeper; don't you ſee, raſcal, that there is no blood or fountain, but the ſkins that are pierced, and the red wine that ſwims about the room? I hope the ſoul of him who pierced them, will ſwim in hell!' 'I know nothing of the matter,' replied Sancho; 'but that, on account of my not finding the head, I ſhall ſee my earldom diſſolve like ſalt in water.'

Thus the ſquire, though awake, was more extravagant than Don Quixote in his dream; ſuch an impreſſion had his maſter's promiſes made upon his imagination. The phlegmatic temper of the ſquire, together with the miſchievous diſpoſition of the knight, well nigh diſtracted the landlord, who ſwore, that they ſhould not now, as formerly, go away without paying; and that all the privilege of their errantry ſhould not exempt them from paying both reckonings to the laſt farthing, for the damage they had done, even to the bits of leather for patching the wine-ſkins that were cut. The curate, by this time, had got hold of the hands of Don Quixote, who, believing he had now fi-

niſhed the adventure, and was in preſence of the Princeſs Micomicona, fell upon his knees before the prieſt, ſaying, 'Renowned princeſs, your highneſs may henceforth live ſecure of what that miſbegotten wretch can do; and I, from this day forward, am acquitted of my promiſe, which is now, by the aſſiſtance of Heaven above, and the favour of her for whom I live and breathe, happily and fully performed.'—'Did not I tell you ſo?' cried Sancho, hearing theſe words. 'You ſee I am not drunk, and may take notice that my maſter hath put the giant in pickle: the holidays will certainly come round, and the earldom fit me to a hair.'

Who could refrain from laughing at the follies of the maſter and man? they occaſioned abundance of mirth to every one preſent, except the landlord, who curſed himſelf to the devil. At length the barber, curate, and Cardenio, with no ſmall difficulty, put the knight to bed again, where he fell faſt aſleep in an inſtant, like one who had been exceſſively fatigued: they left him to his repoſe, and went out to conſole Sancho for his diſappointment in loſing the giant's head; but they found it a harder taſk to pacify the innkeeper, who was driven almoſt to deſpair, by the ſudden death of his winebags; beſides, the landlady began to cry, in a whimpering tone, 'In an unlucky minute and evil hour did this knight-errant enter my doors! for I am ſure, I never beheld him without paying dearly for the ſight! The laſt time he was here, he refuſed to pay a whole night's expence of ſupper, lodging, ſtraw, and barley, for himſelf and his ſquire, his horſe and his aſs; ſaying that he was a knight errant forſooth: (God ſend him and all other knights-errant upon errands that will tend to their ſorrow!) and therefore, was not obliged to pay for any thing, becauſe it was not ordained in the regiſters of chivalry; then, this gentleman coming after him t'other day, borrowed my tail, and though I have got it again, it is a good penny the worſe for the wearing, the hair being plucked off in ſuch a manner as makes it unfit for my huſband's purpoſe;

pose; and to finish and conclude the whole, my bags are broke, and my wine spilt; (would I could see his heart's blood in the same condition!) but he must not think to get off so easily, for by the bones of my father, and my mother's soul! they shall pay for every thing upon the nail; or, may I never be called by my own name again, or believed to be my father's own child!'

These, and other expressions of the same kind, were uttered, with great bitterness, by the landlady; and her faithful servant Maritornes joined in the exclamation; while the daughter held her peace, and, from time to time, smiled at their indignation, which at last was appeased by the curate, who promised to give them satisfaction, to the best of his power, for the loss they had sustained in bags and wine, and, in particular, for the damage done to the tail, which they valued so highly; and Dorothea comforted Sancho, by telling him, that as soon as ever it should appear that his master had actually cut off the giant's head, and she should find herself in quiet possession of her kingdom, she would bestow upon him the best earldom in her gift. The squire was consoled by this promise, and assured the princess, that he was certain he had seen the giant's head, by the same token that he had a huge beard that flowed down to his middle; and that the whole was now vanished, because every thing in that house was performed by enchantment, as he had found by woeful experience, the last time he had lodged in that apartment. Dorothea said she was of the same opinion, desiring he would give himself no uneasiness, for every thing would be for the best, and succeed to his heart's content. The quiet of the house being thus re-established, the curate wanted to read the remaining part of the novel, which he perceived already drew near a close; and Cardenio, Dorothea, and the rest, intreating him to finish the story, he, with a view of pleasing them as well as himself, proceeded in these words:

'Anselmo

'Anſelmo being now ſatisfied of his wife's virtue, enjoyed himſelf without the leaſt diſturbance or care; while Camilla, in order to diſguiſe her real ſentiments, affected always to frown upon Lothario, who, as a farther ſanction to this ſtratagem, deſired Anſelmo to excuſe him from coming to his houſe, ſince it was plain that Camilla was diſguſted at his preſence: but the infatuated Anſelmo would by no means comply with this requeſt; ſo that this unhappy huſband was, in a thouſand ſhapes, the author of his own diſhonour, while, in his own opinion, he was laying up a ſtore of happineſs and reputation.

'About this time Leonela's deſire of gratifying her own looſe wiſhes, carried her to ſuch a pitch of imprudence, that ſhe gave her wantonneſs the rein without the leaſt caution; conſcious that her miſtreſs would conceal her conduct, and even adviſe her how to carry on the intrigue without the leaſt danger of being detected. At length, however, Anſelmo one night heard ſomebody walking in her apartment, and endeavouring to get in and ſee who it was, found the door ſhut againſt him. This circumſtance increaſed his deſire, he made a violent effort, and the door flew open, upon which he entered, and ſeeing a man leap out of the window into the ſtreet, ran haſtily to lay hold or get ſight of him; but he was diſappointed in both by Leonela, who hanging upon her maſter, cried, "Hold, dear Sir! be not ſurprized, nor ſeek to purſue the perſon who is fled; he was here on my account, and is as good as my wedded huſband."

'Anſelmo would give no credit to her words, but, blinded with paſſion, drew his poignard to ſtab Leonela, whom he commanded to reveal the truth on pain of immediate death. She, terrified by his threats, anſwered, without knowing what ſhe ſaid, "Spare my life, good Sir, and I will diſcloſe things of greater importance than you imagine."—"Speak, then," cried Anſelmo, or thou ſhalt inſtantly die."—"At preſent," replied Leonela, "I am in ſuch perturbation, that I cannot poſſibly

possibly make a distinct confession; delay your vengeance till to-morrow morning, and then you shall hear something that will strike you with astonishment: meanwhile be assured, that he who leaped out of the window, is a young man of this city, who has given me a promise of marriage."

'Anselmo being somewhat pacified by this declaration, resolved to grant the respite she demanded; though he never dreamed of hearing any thing to the prejudice of Camilla, of whose virtue he was satisfied and secure; he therefore quitted the room, in which however he locked up Leonela, telling her she must continue in that place until she should have made this promised discovery; then going to Camilla, informed her of every thing that had passed, together with the promise her maid had made of discovering things of great importance. It is almost needless to say that Camilla was disturbed at this information: the terror that took possession of her was such, that believing, with good reason too, Leonela would actually disclose to Anselmo every circumstance of her infidelity, she had not resolution enough to wait the issue of her suspicion; but that very night, while her husband was asleep, collected the best of her jewels, with some money, and getting out of the house, without being perceived, fled to Lothario, and recounted what had happened, at the same time beseeching him to put her in a place of safety, or accompany her to some retreat, where they should be secure from the search of Anselmo.

'Such was the confusion of Lothario, at the news of this unexpected event, that he could not answer one syllable, nor for some time resolve upon what was to be done. At length he proposed to carry Camilla to a monastery, the abbess of which was his first cousin; and his mistress consenting to the proposal, he conducted her thither with all the dispatch which the nature of the case required, and, leaving her to the care of his relation, quitted the city that very night, without imparting the cause of his absence to any living soul.

'Next

'Next morning, ſoon as it was day, Anſelmo, without perceiving that Camilla was gone, ſo eagerly did he long to hear this confeſſion of her maid, aroſe and went directly to the room in which he had confined her; but he no ſooner opened the door, and entered the apartment, than he perceived the ſheets of the bed tied together, hanging out of the window; a manifeſt proof that Leonela had lowered herſelf down into the ſtreet, by means of that contrivance: he then returned, with a good deal of chagrin, to communicate his diſappointment to Camilla, whom when he could not find, he was ſeized with the utmoſt conſternation, eſpecially as none of the ſervants could give the leaſt account of her departure; but chancing, in the courſe of his enquiry, to find the coffers open, and the beſt part of her jewels carried off, he began to comprehend his diſgrace; and concluded that Leonela was not the cauſe of his miſfortune.

'Diſpirited with this reflection, he did not ſtay to dreſs, but went in a moſt diſconſolate ſituation, to give an account of his miſhap to his friend Lothario; and when he underſtood from his ſervants, that their maſter had gone out in the night, and carried all his ready money along with him, he had well nigh loſt his ſenſes. To crown his miſery, he returned to his own houſe, which was deſerted by all his ſervants, and found himſelf the moſt ſolitary being in nature: he knew not what to think, ſay, or do, and his judgment began to be impaired; for, upon recollection, he perceived that he was in an inſtant deprived of his wife, friend, and ſervants, renounced by Heaven, and, what he felt more deeply than any other part of his diſaſter, deſtitute of honour, by the miſconduct of Camilla, from which he dated his utter deſtruction. At length, after a long internal ſtruggle, he reſolved to go to the country-houſe of his friend, where he had been when he furniſhed the opportunity of planning his own ruin. Accordingly, having locked his door, he mounted his horſe, and, almoſt fainting under the burden of his woes, ſet

out for that place; but ſcarce had he travelled one half of the way, when, harraſſed by his ſhocking reflections, he was obliged to alight, and tie his horſe to a tree, at the root of which he threw himſelf down, giving vent to the moſt lamentable ſighs that ever were heaved: there he remained till the twilight; about which time, perceiving a man coming on horſeback from the city, after ſalutation, he aſked what news were ſtirring at Florence. "The ſtrangeſt," replied the citizen, "that have been heard theſe many days; it is publicly reported, that Lothario, the intimate friend of Anſelmo the rich, who lived at St. John's, hath this laſt night carried off the wife of his friend, who is alſo miſſing. This diſcovery was made to the governor by Camilla's maid, who was detected in letting herſelf down by a ſheet, from one of the windows of Anſelmo's houſe. In ſhort, I do not know the particulars exactly; but the whole city is aſtoniſhed at this event, which they could never have expected from the intimacy of the two gentlemen, who were ſo ſtrictly united in the bands of amity, as to acquire the title of the Two Friends." "Do you know what road Lothario and Camilla have taken?" ſaid Anſelmo. "That is not yet diſcovered," replied the traveller; "though the governor hath uſed great diligence in the enquiry." Anſelmo wiſhed him a good evening; and the citizen having returned the compliment, proceeded on his journey.

'These unhappy news reduced this ill-fated huſband to the verge of death as well as diſtraction. He mounted, however, as well as he could, and arrived at the houſe of his friend, who had not as yet heard of his misfortune; but ſeeing him ſo exhauſted, ghaſtly, and pale, imagined he had met with ſome grievous diſaſter. Anſelmo begged to be put to bed immediately, and furniſhed with pen, ink, and paper: thus provided, he was left alone, and the chamber locked at his own deſire; then the remembrance of his misfortune began to be ſo heavy upon his ſoul, that he plainly perceived his

end

end approaching, and being desirous of declaring the cause of his strange and sudden death, he took up the pen; but, before he could execute his design, his breath failed him, and he expired, a victim to that sorrow which was occasioned by his own impertinent curiosity. His friend finding it grow late, and that Anselmo had not called, went into his chamber, to enquire about his health; there he found him laying upon his face, one half of his body in bed, and the other on the table, with a pen in his hand, and a written paper lying open before him.

'The gentleman having spoke to him without receiving any answer, took him by the hand, and feeling him cold and stiff, concluded he was dead. Surprized and concerned to the last degree, he called up his family to be witnesses of this melancholy event, and knowing the paper to be Anselmo's own hand-writing, read the contents, in these words: "I am deprived of life by my own impertinent curiosity. If the news of my death reach Camilla's ears, let her know that I forgive her infidelity; for she was not bound to perform miracles, nor I under any necessity of expecting them at her hands: since, therefore, I have been the contriver of my own dishonour, there is no reason that——" So far he had written, but life had forsaken him before he could finish the sentence. Next day his friend sent an account of his death to his parents, who were already informed of his mischance, as also of the convent to which Camilla had retreated; and where she now lay at the point of accompanying her spouse in his last indispensible journey; not so much on account of Anselmo's death, as in consequence of the information she received concerning her absent lover: it was said, that though she was now a widow, she would neither quit the convent nor take the veil; but in a little time the news arrived of Lothario's being killed in a battle which was fought between the renowned Captain Gonçalo Fernandes de Cordova, and Monsieur De Lautrec, in the kingdom of Naples, whither this too-late re-

 penting

penting friend had made his retreat. This event was no sooner known, than Camilla professed herself a nun, and in a few days yielded up her life a prey to grief and melancholy. Such was the untimely end to which they were all brought from a beginning of whim and indiscretion.'

'This novel,' said the curate, 'is not amiss; but I cannot think the story is true; and if it be feigned, the author has erred in point of invention; for it cannot be supposed that any husband would be so mad as to try this dangerous experiment of Anselmo: had it been related of a gallant and his mistress, it might have passed; but with regard to a husband and his wife, it is altogether improbable; however, the manner of narrating it is not disagreeable.'

CHAPTER IX.

An Account of other strange Adventures that happened at the Inn.

AT that instant the landlord, standing at the inn-door, exclaimed, 'There is a noble company: odd! if they halt here we shall sing for joy.' 'What company?' said Cardenio. 'Four men,' replied the innkeeper, 'who ride with short stirrups, each of them equipped with lance, target, and mask, with a lady on a side-saddle, dressed in white and veiled, and two attendants on foot.' When the priest asked if they were near, he answered, 'So near, that they are already at the gate.'

Dorothea hearing this information, put on her veil, and Cardenio withdrew into Don Quixote's apartment. Immediately the whole company announced by the landlord entered the inn-yard; and the four horsemen, who were persons of genteel mien and carriage, instantly alighting, went to help the lady from her horse, when one of them taking her in his arms, placed her in a chair that stood by the door of the room in which Cardenio had concealed himself. All this time neither she nor they took off their masks, nor uttered one syllable;

lable; but when ſhe was ſeated, ſhe heaved a profound ſigh, and let her arms fall down on each ſide, like a perſon fainting with weakneſs. While the footman led the horſes into the ſtable, the curate, being curious to know who thoſe perſons were, ſo remarkable in their ſilence and dreſs, went up, and put the queſtion to one of the lacquies, who anſwered, 'Truly, Signior, we are as ignorant in that particular as you are; though they ſeem to be people of condition, eſpecially he who took the lady in his arms, becauſe all the reſt behave to him with great reſpect, following his directions in every thing, with the utmoſt punctuality.'—'And, pray, who may the lady be?' ſaid the prieſt. 'We know as little of her as of the men,' replied the lacquey; 'for during the journey I have never once beheld her face; I have often heard her ſigh bitterly, and utter piercing groans, in every one of which ſhe ſeemed to yield her very ſoul; but it is not to be wondered at that we ſhould know ſo little of their affairs, my companion and I having attended them two days only; for, meeting us on the road, they intreated and perſuaded us to accompany them as far as Andaluſia, promiſing to pay us handſomely for our trouble.' 'Have you never heard one of them named?' reſumed the curate. 'Never once,' anſwered the young man; 'they travel with ſurpriſing ſilence; nothing is heard but the ſobs and ſighs of the poor lady, which move us to compaſſion; we firmly believe that ſhe is forced upon this journey, and gather from her dreſs that ſhe is a nun; or, which is more probable, going to take the veil; and finding herſelf very little inclined to that way of life, is melancholy at the proſpect.'

The curate ſaid, nothing was more probable; and leaving the lacquey, returned to Dorothea, who by this time, out of natural ſympathy with the affliction of the maſked lady, had approached and accoſted her in theſe words: 'What is the matter with you, dear Madam? If you labour under any indiſpoſition which the practice and experience of women can relieve, my

 aſſiſtance

aſſiſtance is heartily at your ſervice.' To this kind offer no reply was made by the ſorrowful lady, who, notwithſtanding the other's repeated intreaties, would not open her mouth; until the perſon who, by the lacquey's information, was chief of the company, addreſſing himſelf to Dorothea, ſaid, 'Do not fatigue yourſelf, Madam, in making proffers of ſervice to that woman, who cannot be grateful for any favour ſhe receives; nor importune her for any reply, unleſs you deſire to hear ſome falſhoods proceed from her lips.' 'My lips,' ſaid the hitherto ſilent lady, 'were never profaned with falſhood; on the contrary, my preſent misfortune is owing to my ſincerity and my abhorrence of lyes. Of this aſſertion you yourſelf are too ſenſible; ſince your own perfidy and falſhood are the effects of my conſtancy and truth.'

Theſe words were diſtinctly overheard by Cardenio, who was only ſeparated from them by the door of Don Quixote's chamber; and they no ſooner reached his ears, than he cried aloud, "Good Heaven, what do I hear! What voice is that which ſtruck my ſenſe!' The lady being exceedingly ſurpriſed at that exclamation, turned about her head, and not ſeeing the perſon that pronounced it, ſtarted up, and ran towards the apartment from whence it ſeemed to come; but was prevented by her conductor, who would not ſuffer her to move one ſtep farther. In the diſorder occaſioned by her ſtruggle, her maſk dropped off, and diſcovered a countenance of incomparable and amazing beauty, even though diſguiſed with paleneſs and horror; for her eyes rolled about to every corner which her ſight could reach, with ſuch eagerneſs and wildneſs, that ſhe looked like a woman poſſeſſed.

Dorothea, and all preſent, were infinitely concerned at theſe ſymptoms, the meaning of which they could not underſtand; meanwhile, the cavalier was ſo buſied in holding her faſt by the ſhoulders, that he could not attend to his maſk, which alſo fell to the ground: and Dorothea lifting up her eyes towards him, as he held the lady

lady in his arms, perceived that this cavalier was no other than her own husband, Don Fernando. No sooner did she recognize his features, than fetching a long and melancholy sigh from the very bottom of her soul, she fell backward in a swoon, and if the barber had not been at hand to support her, would have certainly come to the ground: the curate ran instantly to take off her veil, that he might sprinkle water on her face, which was immediately known by Don Fernando, who held the other lady in his arms, and was thunderstruck at the sight: he would not, however, quit Lucinda, who struggled to get loose; she and Cardenio having by this time recognized each other by their mutual exclamations. He had also overheard the groan uttered by Dorothea when she fainted, and believing that it proceeded from Lucinda, rushed out of his apartment in a fright, when the first object he beheld was Don Fernando clasping her in his arms. This nobleman knew him immediately, and all three, (namely, Lucinda, Cardenio, and Dorothea,) were struck dumb with astonishment, and seemed insensible of what had happened, gazing in silence at one another.

Dorothea directed her eager view to Don Fernando, who stared at Cardenio, whose eyes were fixed upon Lucinda, who looked wishfully at him; but the first that broke silence, was this last, who addressed herself in these words to Don Fernando: 'Suffer me, Signior, in regard to your own character, since you are deaf to every other consideration, to cleave to that wall of which I am the ivy, to avail myself of that prop from which you could not disengage me, with all your importunities, promises, and threats. Behold how Heaven, by unusual and mysterious means, hath brought me to my true and lawful husband; and since you know, by dear-bought experience, that nothing but death can expel his image from my breast, let this plain demonstration, since all other attempts are vain, convert your love into rage, your friendship into hate, and instantly deprive me of life, which I shall yield with pleasure in the

the preſence of my legal lord, who will then perhaps be convinced of the fidelity I preſerved to the laſt moment of my exiſtence.'

In the mean time, Dorothea being recovered from her ſwoon, had liſtened to Lucinda's declaration, by which ſhe diſcovered her ſituation and name; but perceiving that Don Fernando neither quitted his hold, nor anſwered one word to her ſolicitation, ſhe exerted her whole ſtrength in falling down on her knees before him, and having ſhed a large quantity of tears from her beautiful eyes, accoſted him in theſe words: "My dear lord! if your eyes were not dazzled and obſcured by the rays of that ſun which you hold eclipſed within your arms, you would perceive that ſhe who thus kneels before you, is the unhappy (ſo long as you are pleaſed ſhe ſhould be ſo) and forlorn Dorothea—I am that humble country-maiden whom your generoſity or paſſion vouchſafed to raiſe to the honour of calling you her own. I am ſhe who, confined within the bounds of modeſty, lived a contented life, until moved by your importunities, and ſeemingly upright addreſſes, ſhe opened the gates of her reſerve, and ſurrendered to you the keys of her freedom. An offering but ill requited, as plainly appears by that hard fate, in conſequence of which I am found in this place, and alſo find you in your preſent ſituation. Nevertheleſs, I would not have you imagine that I came hither, induced by any diſhonourable motives; but that the ſorrow conceived at ſeeing myſelf forſaken and forgotten by you, was the ſole cauſe of my retreat. You deſired I ſhould be your own; and that deſire you accompliſhed ſo effectually, that although your inclinations may be changed, it is impoſſible you ſhould ceaſe to be mine. Conſider, my lord, that my unparalleled affection may counterbalance the beauty and birth of her for whom I am abandoned: you cannot be the fair Lucinda's huſband, becauſe you are already mine; nor ſhe become your wife, while ſhe appertains to Cardenio; and it will be a much eaſier taſk, if you reflect upon it impartially, to recal your love

love for her who adores you, than to gain the affection of one by whom you are abhorred. You solicited my unsuspecting heart, you importuned my integrity, you was not ignorant of my lowly station, and know in what manner I yielded to your will; so that you have no subterfuge, nor the least room to say you was deceived. If this be the case, as doubtless it is, and you be a Christian as well as a gentleman, why do you, by such evasions, delay to make the end as happy as the beginning of my fortune? If you will not receive me as what I really am, your lawful wife, at least admit me into the number of your slaves; for, in whatever shape I belong to you, I shall account myself fortunate and blessed: do not, therefore, by renouncing me entirely, give scandal an opportunity of impeaching my honour. Make not my parents miserable in their old age; their faithful services to your father merit a more kind return! If you think your blood will be debased in mixing with mine, consider, that almost all the great families on earth have undergone the same intercourse, and that the woman's quality in no manner affects illustrious descent: besides, true nobility consists in virtue, and in that shall I have the advantage over you, if you deny and oppose the justice of my claim. In fine, the last argument I shall use is this, whether you are pleased or displeased with your destiny, I am your lawful wife: witness your own words, which neither are nor ought to be false; if you value yourself on that for which you undervalue me; witness your handwriting, and Heaven above, to the testimony of which you appealed for the performance of your promise; and if all these should fail, your conscience will never cease whispering to you, amidst your pleasures, in vindication of this truth, which will disturb your most exalted enjoyments.'

This supplication, enforced with other arguments, was pronounced so feelingly by the afflicted and weeping Dorothea, that tears of sympathy were shed by all present, the companions of Don Fernando not excepted;

ed; he himſelf liſtened without anſwering one word, until ſhe had made an end of her addreſs, and began to uter ſuch woeful ſighs and groans, as were almoſt ſufficient to melt an heart of braſs. Lucinda ſtood gazing upon her with equal compaſſion for her ſorrow, and admiration of her beauty and good ſenſe; nay, ſhe would have gone and offered her all the conſolation in her power, had ſhe not ſtill been kept faſt locked in the arms of Don Fernando; who, full of confuſion and ſurpriſe, after having for a good while fixed his eyes upon Dorothea, with great attention, opened his arms, and leaving Lucinda at liberty, ſaid, 'You have conquered, beauteous Dorothea: the victory is yours; for ſo many truths conjoined are ſurely irreſiſtible.'

Lucinda was ſo faint and weak, that when Don Fernando quitted her, ſhe would have fallen to the ground, had it not been for Cardenio, who had placed himſelf behind her raviſher, that he might not be known*; but now, laying aſide all fear, and reſolving to adventure every thing, he ſprung to the aſſiſtance of Lucinda, and catching her in his arms, 'If,' ſaid he, 'it be the will and pleaſure of pitying Heaven, that you ſhould find repoſe, my faithful, conſtant, and charming Lucinda! I think you can enjoy it no where ſo ſecurely, as in theſe arms, which now receive, and formerly encircled you, when fortune was pleaſed that I ſhould call you mine.'

At theſe words, ſhe gazed upon him with great eagerneſs; ſhe had before began to recognize his voice, and now, recollecting his features, like a perſon deprived of judgment, who diſregards all decency and form, ſhe threw her arms about his neck, and joining her lips to his, 'Yes, my dear Cardenio,' ſaid ſhe, 'you are the real lord of this your ſlave, in ſpite of adverſe fate, and all thoſe threats, though greater than they

* But it appears in the preceding page, that he was already known both to Fernando and Lucinda. *Aliquando bonus dormitat Homerus.*

they are, that perſecute my life, which now depends on yours alone.'

An unexpected ſight was this to Don Fernando, and all the bye-ſtanders, who were not a little ſurpriſed at what they ſaw. While Dorothea, obſerving her huſband change colour, and ſignify an inclination of being revenged upon Cardenio, by laying his hand upon his ſword, ran, with incredible agility, and claſping his knees, which ſhe kiſſed, held him ſo firmly embraced that he could not move, ſaying, while the tears trickled from her eyes, 'What means my only refuge to do on this unexpected occaſion? Your own wife is now kneeling before you, and ſhe whom you deſire to wed is in the arms of her lawful huſband; conſider whether it be juſt or poſſible for you to undo that which Heaven hath done; why ſhould you ſeek to unite yourſelf with one, who, diſdaining all oppoſition and inconvenience, and confirmed in her own conſtancy and truth, even before your eyes, lets fall from her's a ſhower of tenderneſs into the boſom of her lawful ſpouſe? For the ſake of God and of yourſelf, I entreat and beſeech you, that this remarkable recognition may not only fail to increaſe your indignation, but even diminiſh it in ſuch a manner, that theſe two lovers may, without any impediment from you, enjoy each other as long as Heaven will permit them to live. In this ſelf-denial you will manifeſt the generoſity of your noble and illuſtrious ſoul, and convince the world, that you are governed more by reaſon than by appetite.'

While Dorothea pronounced theſe words, Cardenio, though he held Lucinda in his arms, kept his eyes ſtill fixed upon Don Fernando, with full reſolution, if he attempted any thing to his prejudice, to defend himſelf as well as he could, againſt his adverſary and all his adherents, although it ſhould coſt him his life. But this young nobleman's friends, together with the curate and barber, not forgetting honeſt Sancho Panza, who were preſent at the whole affair, interpoſed, and making a circle about him, begged earneſtly that he would

would be pleased to consider the tears of Dorothea, and if what she alledged was true, as they firmly believed it was, no longer suffer her to be defrauded of her just and reasonable hope. They desired him to observe, that in all appearance it was not by accident, but the immediate direction of Providence, that they had all met together so unexpectedly in this place; and the curate intreated him to reflect, that death alone could divide Lucinda from Cardenio; that though they might be parted by the edge of the sword, they would look upon death as the greatest blessing that could befal them; and that, in a case of this kind, which admitted of no other remedy, it would be his wisest course, to constrain and conquer his own passion, and demonstrate the generosity of his heart, by permitting, of his own free will, these two lovers to enjoy that state of happiness which Heaven had ordained for their lot; that he should contemplate Dorothea's beauty, which, far from being excelled, was equalled in few or none; and to her beauty, add the consideration of her humility and excessive love; above all, take notice, that if he valued himself upon being a gentleman and a Christian, he could do no less than perform the promise he had given, and in so doing, act in conformity to the will of God, and satisfy the discreet part of mankind, who are very sensible that it is the prerogative of beauty, even in a low estate, when accompanied with virtue, to be lifted up to the highest rank, without any disparagement to the person who thus raises it to an equality with himself; and since the irresistible force of inclination must prevail, provided there be nothing criminal in the means, he is not to be blamed who acts according to its dictates.

To these arguments were added so many of the same sort, that the valiant heart of Don Fernando, nourished by illustrious blood, relented, and he was overcome by the force of that truth, which, however inclined, he could not deny. The signal of his surrender, and yielding to this reasonable and just proposal, was his

stooping

ſtooping down and embracing Dorothea; to whom he ſaid, 'Riſe, Madam; it is not juſt that ſhe who reigns in my ſoul, ſhould lie proſtrate at my feet. If hitherto I have given ſmall proof of what I now profeſs, perhaps my omiſſion hath been owing to the appointment of Heaven, that by giving you an opportunity of manifeſting the ſincerity of your love, I might know how to eſteem you according to your deſerts. I beg, therefore, you will not upbraid me with my miſconduct and unkind neglect; ſince the ſame force and occaſion that attached me to you, was the cauſe of my endeavour to diſengage myſelf. That you may be convinced of the truth, behold and contemplate the eyes of the now contented Lucinda, in which you will find an excuſe for all my errors; and, ſince ſhe hath found and attained her heart's deſire, and my utmoſt wiſh is fulfilled in thus retrieving you, may ſhe live in peace and quiet, for many happy years, with her Cardenio, and may Heaven grant the ſame felicity to me with Dorothea!'

So ſaying, he embraced her again, preſſing his lips to her's with ſuch tenderneſs, that it required his greateſt efforts to forbear giving, with his tears, indubitable ſigns of his affection and remorſe. But thoſe endeavours did not ſucceed with Lucinda, Cardenio, and every other perſon preſent, who began to weep ſo plentifully, either at their own happineſs, or the ſatisfaction of their friends, that one would have thought ſome grievous misfortune had happened to the whole company. Even Sancho blubbered; though he afterwards owned, that his ſorrow proceeded from ſeeing that Dorothea was not, as he imagined, the Queen of Micomicon, from whom he expected ſuch favours.

This univerſal admiration and thaw having laſted ſome time, Cardenio and Lucinda fell upon their knees before Don Fernando, whom they thanked for his generoſity in ſuch polite terms, that he ſcarce knew what anſwer to make, but raiſed and embraced them both with demonſtrations of uncommon courteſy and affection. Then aſking Dorothea how ſhe had come to that

place, ſo diſtant from her own home, ſhe, with great elegance and brevity, repeated what ſhe had before recounted to Cardenio; and her huſband and his company were ſo pleaſed with her narration, that they wiſhed it could have been ſpun out to a much greater length; ſo gracefully did ſhe relate her own misfortunes.

Her taſk being finiſhed, Don Fernando informed them of what had happened to him in the city, after he found, in Lucinda's boſom, the paper in which ſhe declared herſelf Cardenio's wife. Seeing that ſhe could not poſſibly be his, he ſaid, he was determined to put her to death, and would actually have executed his purpoſe, had not her parents interpoſed. He then quitted the houſe, full of ſhame and reſentment, reſolving to revenge himſelf with the firſt opportunity; and next day underſtood that ſhe was gone off, without any body's knowing whither ſhe had directed her flight. At length, however, in a few months, he got notice that ſhe was in a certain monaſtery, where ſhe intended to ſpend her whole life, if ſhe could not enjoy it in the company of Cardenio. He no ſooner received this intimation, than chuſing theſe three gentlemen for his companions, he went ſtraight to the place of her reſidence; but without ſpeaking to her, or making himſelf known, leſt the monaſtery ſhould be more ſtrictly guarded on his account. He waited, therefore, until one day he found the porter's lodge open; when leaving two of his friends to ſecure the door, he entered the monaſtery with the other, in queſt of Lucinda, whom he found in the cloiſters, talking with a nun; and ſnatching her off, without giving her a moment's time for recollection, carried her inſtantly to a place where they provided themſelves with neceſſaries for their journey. This exploit they were enabled to perform with ſafety, becauſe the monaſtery ſtood in the middle of a field, at a good diſtance from any village or town. He ſaid, Lucinda no ſooner perceived herſelf in his power, than ſhe fainted away, and when ſhe recovered the uſe

of

of her ſenſes, did nothing but weep and ſigh, without ſpeaking one word; ſo that, accompanied with ſilence and tears, they arrived at that inn, which he looked upon as the heavenly goal where all earthly misfortunes were happily terminated.

CHAPTER X.

A Continuation of the Hiſtory of the renowned Princeſs Micomicona, with other pleaſant Adventures.

SANCHO heard every thing that paſſed with no ſmall anxiety of mind, ſeeing the hopes of his preferment vaniſh into ſmoke, the beautiful Princeſs Micomicona transformed into Dorothea, the giant into Don Fernando, and his maſter in a ſound ſleep, little dreaming of what had happened. Dorothea could not perſuade herſelf, that all her good fortune was not a dream; Cardenio entertained the ſame opinion, which was alſo embraced by Lucinda; while Don Fernando gave thanks to Heaven for its favour, in extricating him from that labyrinth of perplexity, in which he was at the point of loſing his reputation and ſoul. In fine, every perſon preſent was well ſatisfied, and rejoiced at the happy iſſue of ſuch intricate and deſperate affairs. The curate repreſented every thing in the right point of view, with great diſcretion, and congratulated the parties concerned on the felicity they had acquired; but ſhe whoſe joy was moſt vociferous was the landlady, who loudly exulted in the promiſe of Cardenio and the curate, who had undertaken to pay her with intereſt, for the damage ſhe had ſuſtained on Don Quixote's account. Sancho alone, as we have already obſerved, was afflicted, unfortunate, and ſad, and going to his maſter, who was juſt awake, ſaid, with a lamentable tone, 'Sir Knight of the Rueful Countenance, your worſhip may now ſleep as long as you pleaſe, without giving yourſelf the trouble of ſlaying the giant, or reſtoring the princeſs to her throne; that whole affair is already brought to a concluſion.'

'I really

'I really believe what you say,' answered the knight, 'for I have been engaged with the giant, in the most obstinate and outrageous combat that I believe I shall ever fight in all the days of my life; with one back-stroke, slam went his head to the ground, and discharged such a quantity of blood, that it ran like rills of water along the field.' 'Or rather like red wine, your worship should say,' replied the squire; 'for I must inform you, if you do not already know it, that the dead giant is no other than a wine-bag, and the blood, eighteen gallons of good red wine, which was contained in its belly: the head you cut off is the whore my mother, and the whole affair is gone to the devil.' 'What does the lunatic mean?' said Don Quixote,' 'are you in your right senses, Sancho?' 'Rise, Sir,' resumed the squire, 'and see what a fine piece of work you have made, and what a score you have run. You shall behold the queen converted into a private lady, called Dorothea, with many other strange events, at which, if you take them right, you will be hugely astonished.' 'I shall not wonder at any thing of that kind,' replied his master; 'for thou may'st remember, the last time we were in this house, I told thee that every incident which happened was conducted and brought about by inchantment, so that we need not be surprised if the same power should prevail at present.' 'I should be of your worship's opinion,' answered Sancho,' 'if my blanketting had been of the same stamp; but that was not the case, for it was really and truly a substantial tossing. This very innkeeper, whom we saw to-day, held a corner of the blanket, and canted me into the air with great strength and nimbleness, passing a thousand waggish jokes, and laughing at me all the while; from whence I concluded, simple and sinner as I am, that as I knew their persons, there was no enchantment in the case, but abundance of bruising and bad fortune.' 'Well, Heaven will make thee amends,' said the knight; 'meanwhile, reach me my cloaths;

cloaths; for I want to go forth and examine those events and transformations which thou hast mentioned.'

While Sancho was helping him to dress, the curate gave Don Fernando and his company an account of Don Quixote's madness, and the artifice they had used to disengage him from the poor rock to which he imagined himself exiled by the disdain of his mistress. He also recounted all those adventures that Sancho had imparted to him, at which they were not a little surprised, and laughed immoderately, agreeing in opinion with every body who knew the knight, that it was the strangest extravagance that ever entered a disturbed imagination. The priest moreover observed, that since the good fortune of Dorothea obstructed the progress of their design, there was a necessity for inventing another plan that should bring him home to his own house. Cardenio proposed that they should prosecute the scheme they had already began; and Lucinda would act and represent the part of Dorothea. 'No,' said Don Fernando, 'that must not be: Dorothea shall still proceed with her own invention; for, as it cannot be far from hence to the habitation of that honest gentleman, I shall be glad to contribute towards his cure.' And when he understood that they would arrive in two days at his house; 'Were it farther off,' said he, 'I should go with pleasure to assist in such a laudable design.'

At that instant Don Quixote came forth, armed at all points, with Mambrino's helmet, battered as it was, upon his head, his shield braced upon his arm, and his pole or lance in his hand. Don Fernando and his companions were amazed at this strange apparition, when they beheld such a rueful length of face, so withered and tawny, together with his ill-sorted armour, and the solemnity of his gait. They gazed upon him in silent expectation of what he would say, while he, with infinite gravity of aspect, fixing his eyes upon Dorothea, accosted her in these words: 'Fair lady, I am informed by this my squire, that your greatness is annihilated, and your quality undone, by being changed from

from your former rank of queen and ſovereign princeſs, into the condition of a private damſel. If this hath been done by the necromancy of the king your father, who is perhaps afraid that I ſhould not be able to give you the aſſiſtance required, I ſay he neither knows, nor ever did know, the half of that art which he profeſſeth, and that he is but little converſant in the hiſtory of chivalry; for had he read and peruſed it with ſuch leiſure and attention as I have beſtowed upon that ſubject, he would have found, that on every occaſion, knights of much leſs reputation than I poſſeſs, have atchieved much more difficult enterprizes than this, it being a matter of ſmall moment to kill a pitiful giant, let him be as arrogant as he will; for not many hours ago, I ſaw myſelf engaged with one—but I chuſe to be ſilent rather than have my veracity called in queſtion, though time, that unmaſks all things, will ſhew when we leaſt expect it.'

'That you was engaged with wine-bags, and not with a giant!' cried the innkeeper; who was ſilenced by Don Fernando, and forbid to interrupt the knight's diſcourſe in any ſhape whatever. So that Don Quixote proceeded, ſaying, 'In fine, if the father of your diſinherited highneſs hath performed this metamorphoſis on your perſon, for the cauſes I have mentioned, I hope you will give no credit to ſuch conſiderations; for there is no danger upon earth through which my ſword will not open a way, and by laying the head of your adverſary in the duſt in a few days, inveſt yours with that crown to which you have an undoubted right.'

Here Don Quixote left off ſpeaking, in expectation of a reply from the princeſs, who knowing it was Don Fernando's pleaſure that ſhe ſhould continue the deceit, until the knight could be brought back to his own houſe, anſwered with equal gravity and grace, 'Whoſoever hath told you, moſt valiant Knight of the Rueful Countenance, that I am changed and transformed from what I was, has not adhered to the truth in his information:

information: indeed I am ſomewhat changed by certain fortunate events which have happened even beyond my own expectation; but, nevertheleſs, I have not ceaſed to be what I was, nor altered that reſolution which I have always maintained, of taking the advantage of your valiant and invincible arm. Wherefore, dear Sir, be ſo good as to do juſtice to the honour of the father who begat me, and look upon him as a man of ſagacity and foreſight; ſince, by the ſcience he profeſſed, he found ſuch an eaſy and effectual path to the cure of my misfortune; for I firmly believe, that were it not for you, I ſhould not now be ſo happy as I am, as the greateſt part of theſe gentlemen can truly witneſs. Nothing then remains, but that we ſet out to-morrow, becauſe we could not propoſe to travel far to-day; and as for the ſucceſs on which my hopes are built, I leave it entirely to God, and the worth of your heroick breaſt.'

Don Quixote hearing theſe words, turned to Sancho, in the moſt violent indignation, ſaying, 'I proteſt, ſirrah! you are the moſt malicious little ſlanderer in Spain. Say, you raſcal, you vagabond! did not you tell me juſt now, that the princeſs was transformed into a private gentlewoman called Dorothea; and that the head, which I know I cut from the giant's ſhoulders, was the whore your mother; with many more fooliſh particulars, which threw me into the greateſt confuſion that ever I felt ſince I was born? By Heaven!' (here he turned up his eyes and bit his lips) 'I have a ſtrong inclination to commit ſuch ſlaughter upon thee, as will be an inſtructive warning* to all the lying ſquires who ſhall henceforth attend knights-errant in the courſe of their adventures.'

'Pray be pacified, good your worſhip!' cried Sancho: 'I may poſſibly be deceived in what concerns the change of my Lady Princeſs Micomicona; but as to the giant's head being a wine-bag, and the blood no other than good red wine, I am not miſtaken, as I ſhall

* In the original, 'As will put ſalt in the ſkull.'

I shall answer to God; for the skins that were slashed are still to be seen by your worship's bed side, and the whole room is flooded with the wine. But the proof of the pudding is in the eating of it*; you will be convinced when Mr. What-d'ye call him, our landlord here, makes out a bill of the damage he has suffered. As to the rest, I am rejoiced from my soul, to find that the queen's majesty is the same as usual, because it concerns me, as well as any other neighbour's child.' I tell thee, Sancho,' replied Don Quixote 'that thou art distracted: forgive me, that is enough.' 'Enough in all conscience,' said Don Fernando; 'there is nothing more to be said on this subject. I think the princess judges very prudently in deferring her journey till to-morrow, because the day is already far advanced; let us therefore spend this night in agreeable conversation, and at the approach of day, we will in a body attend the gallant Don Quixote, that we may be witnesses of the unheard of exploits which he will doubtless perform in the course of this vast enterprize he hath undertaken.' It is my duty and resolution to serve and attend you,' answered the knight; 'and I have the most grateful sense of your favour and good opinion, which I shall endeavour to justify, though it should cost me my life, or even more—if more I can pay.'

Many compliments and proffers of service passed between Don Fernando and Don Quixote; but they were interrupted by the arrival of a traveller, who, by his garb, seemed to be a Christian slave lately escaped from Barbary; for he was clad in a coat of blue cloth, wanting a collar, with short skirts and half-sleeves; his breeches and cap were of the same stuff; and he wore date-coloured buskins, with a Moorish scymitar

* Literally, 'You shall see when the eggs are fried.' A phrase alluding to the story of a thief, who having stole a frying-pan, and being asked by the owner what he carried under his cloak, replied, "You will see when the eggs are fried.' Metaphorically, 'Time will discover.'

scymitar flung in a shoulder-belt across his breast. He was followed by a woman dressed in the Moorish habit, mounted upon an ass; with a veil over her face, a brocaded bonnet on her head, and a mantle that flowed from her shoulders to her heels. The man was robust, and well proportioned, seemingly turned of forty, with a brownish complexion, large whiskers, and a well furnished beard; in short, his mien was so genteel, that if he had been properly dressed, they would have taken him for a man of birth and quality.

Soon as he entered the gate, he called for a private apartment, and seemed very much concerned, when he understood that all the rooms of the inn were engaged: however, he went to the lady in Moorish dress, and lifted her off in his arms. Upon which Lucinda, Dorothea, the landlady, her daughter, and Maritornes, flocked around her; their curiosity being excited by the novelty of the garb, which none of them had ever seen before: and Dorothea, who was always good-humoured, mannerly, and discreet, concluding that both she and her conductor were chagrined at their want of a chamber, spoke to her thus: 'Be not uneasy, Madam, at your want of accommodation here; it is the inconvenience of almost all inns; but if you will be pleased to partake with us, (pointing to Lucinda,) perhaps you will find that in the course of your journey you have been fain to put up with harder fare.' The veiled lady made no answer; but only rising from her seat, signified her thanks by crossing her hands upon her bosom, bending her body, and bowing her head; so that from her silence they conjectured that she must be a native Moor, and that she could not speak any Christian language.

Her attendant, who had hitherto been employed in something else, perceiving that the company had made a circle about his companion, who could make no replies to their interrogations, said to them, 'Ladies, this young woman understands little or no Spanish, and speaks no language but that of her own country; so

ſo that ſhe is incapable of anſwering any queſtions you may have aſked.' 'We have aſked no queſtions,' ſaid Lucinda, 'but only made her an offer of our company for this night, with a ſhare of our lodging, and what accommodation is to be had; and this we tender with that hearty good-will which obliges us to ſerve all ſtrangers, eſpecially thoſe of our own ſex who ſtand in need of our aſſiſtance.' 'Dear Madam,' replied the conductor, 'in her name and in my own, I return you a thouſand thanks, and highly eſteem your proffered favour, which on this occaſion, and from ſuch perſons as your appearance proclaims you to be, muſt certainly be very kind and condeſcending.' 'Signior,' ſaid Dorothea, 'is this lady Chriſtian or Moor? By her ſilence and her dreſs, we are induced to believe ſhe is not what we could wiſh her to be.' 'In her body and dreſs,' replied the ſtranger, 'ſhe is a Moor, but altogether a Chriſtian in her ſoul; for ſhe longs ardently to be a profeſſed convert to our faith.' Then ſhe is not baptized?' reſumed Lucinda. 'She has had no opportunity,' ſaid the captive, 'ſince ſhe quitted Algiers, which is her native country; and hitherto hath never been in ſuch imminent danger of her life, as to make it neceſſary before ſhe is inſtructed in all the ceremonies enjoined by our holy mother church; but, if it pleaſe Heaven, ſhe ſhall be baptized very ſoon, with decency ſuitable to the quality of her perſon, which is greater than either her dreſs or mine ſeems to declare.'

This intimation raiſed the curioſity of all the ſpectators, to know who this Moor and captive were; but nobody choſe to aſk the queſtion at that time, which ſeemed more proper for repoſing themſelves than relating the hiſtory of their lives. Dorothea taking her by the hand, ſeated the ſtranger cloſe by her ſide, and entreated her to take off the veil; ſhe looked at her conductor, as if ſhe wanted to know what the lady deſired, and he told her in Arabick, that they entreated her to be uncovered; at the ſame time, ad-

vising her to comply with their request. She accordingly unveiled herself, and discovered a face so amiable, that Dorothea thought her handsomer than Lucinda, who, in her turn, gave her the preference to Dorothea; and all present concluded, that if any creature upon earth could vie with them in beauty, it was this Moorish lady, who, in the opinion of some of the company, excelled them both in certain particulars. As beauty, therefore, has the privilege and energy to conciliate minds and attract affections, every body present was seized with an inclination to serve and cherish the charming Moor. Don Fernando asked her name of the captive, who answered, 'Lela Zorayda:' This she no sooner heard, than understanding the question which had been put to the Christian, she pronounced with great eagerness and sweetness of concern, 'No, no Zorayda; Maria, Maria!' signifying that her name was Maria, and not Zorayda: these words, with the affecting manner in which they were expressed, brought tears from the eyes of some of the hearers, especially the women, who are naturally tender and compassionate. Lucinda embraced her affectionately, saying, 'Yes, yes, Maria, Maria.' And to this the Moor replied, 'Yes, yes, Maria; Zorayda, *macange*:' which, in the Arabick, signifies, '*No*.'

Meanwhile it grew late; and the inn-keeper, by order of Don Fernando's attendants, prepared, with great diligence and care, as good a repast as he could possibly provide; so that, when supper-time arrived, they sat down all together at a long hall table, for there was neither a round nor square one in the house. They forced the head and principal seat, in spite of all his excuses, on Don Quixote, who desired that the Princess Micomicona might sit by the side of her protector; next to her, Lucinda and Zorayda placed themselves, being fronted by Fernando and Cardenio, at whose left hand sat the captive and the other gentlemen, while the curate and the barber took their station close to the ladies. In this manner they supped with vast satisfaction, which

which was ſtill increaſed, when Don Quixote, leaving off eating, and inſpired by the ſame ſpirit that moved him to harangue among the goatherds, began the following diſſertation : ' Verily, gentlemen, if it be duly conſidered, great and unexpected events are ſeen by thoſe who profeſs the order of knight-errantry. What inhabitant of this earth, if he ſhould now enter the gates of this caſtle, and behold us ſeated in this manner, could conceive or credit that we are what we are? Who could imagine, that this lady on my right-hand is the great queen whom we all know her to be, and that I am the Knight of the Rueful Countenance, ſo celebrated by the voice of fame? Now there is no manner of doubt, that this exerciſe and art exceeds all others hitherto invented by man, and that it ought to be more eſteemed, becauſe it is more expoſed to danger. Away with thoſe who give letters the preference over arms! I affirm, that ſuch people, whoſoever they are, know not what they ſay ; for the ſole reaſon to which they adhere, in this deciſion, is, that the labour of the body is exceeded by that of the mind ; and that the profeſſion of arms is altogether as corporeal as the exerciſe and office of a common day-labourer, that requires nothing more than bodily ſtrength ; as if that which is called ſoldierſhip by us who profeſs it, did not include acts of valour which none but perſons of uncommon genius could execute ; or, as if the toil of a warrior, who has the charge of an army, or commands in a town that is beſieged, doth not affect the mind as well as the body. Is it to be ſuppoſed, that by mere corporeal ſtrength he can penetrate and diſcover the intention of the enemy? To anticipate deſigns, baffle ſtratagems, ſurmount difficulties, and prevent the miſchief that is to be dreaded, are all efforts of the underſtanding, in which the body hath no ſhare ; if the profeſſion of arms, therefore, requires genius, as well as that of letters, let us ſee which of the two requires moſt mental toil : and this queſtion may be determined, by conſidering the end and aim of each ; for that occu-

 pation

pation deſerves the higheſt eſteem, which hath the nobleſt purpoſe in view, the end and ſcope of letters. I ſpeak not here, of that divine learning, whoſe aim is to raiſe and conduct the ſoul to Heaven; to an end ſo infinite, no intention whatever can be compared. I ſpeak of human learning, the ultimate end of which is to regulate diſtributive juſtice, render to every one his due, and to underſtand and to protect the equitable laws; an aim certainly generous and highly commendable! yet not ſo deſerving of the moſt ſublime praiſe as the profeſſion of arms, the object and the end of which is peace, the greateſt good that mortals can enjoy; for, the firſt bleſſed news which this world and mankind heard, were thoſe pronounced by the angels, on that night, which was our day, when they ſung in the air, "Glory be to God on high; and on earth, peace and good will towards men;" and the ſalutation, which the beſt Maſter, either in heaven or upon earth, taught his adherents and favourites; which was to ſay, when they entered any houſe, "Peace be to this houſe!" Nay, he himſelf, at different times, ſaid, "My peace I give unto you! My peace I leave with you! Peace be among you!" A jewel and legacy well worthy of him who left it! a jewel, without which there can be no felicity, either on earth or in heaven! This peace is the genuine aim of war; for arms and war are the ſame; and this being taken for granted, the end of war is nobler than that of learning; wherefore, let us next conſider the bodily toil ſuſtained by each, that we may ſee on which ſide the balance lies in that particular."

In this ſenſible manner did Don Quixote continue his diſcourſe, from which nobody that heard him could diſtinguiſh that he was mad; on the contrary, his audience conſiſting chiefly of gentlemen, to which title the profeſſion of arms is annexed, they liſtened with great pleaſure, while he proceed thus.

'The hardſhips of a ſtudent, I ſay, are theſe; firſt of all, poverty; (not that all ſtudents are poor, but that

that we may ſuppoſe the worſt that can happen,) and when I have named his indigence, the whole of his misfortune is mentioned; for he that his poor can enjoy nothing that is good, but muſt endure neceſſity in all its forms; ſometimes hunger, ſometimes cold, ſometimes nakedneſs, and often all three together. Nevertheleſs, his neceſſity is not ſo great, but that he eats, though perhaps later than uſual, or though he may feed upon the leavings of the rich, or, which is the greateſt miſery to which a ſcholar can be reduced, go a-ſopping*, as they term it; then they are always admitted to ſome charitable perſon's fire-ſide or chimney-corner, where, if they cannot warm themſelves effectually, they may at leaſt defy the cold; and at night they ſleep under cover. I need not deſcend to minute particulars; ſuch as want of linen, ſcarcity of ſhoes, flimſy and thread bare cloaths, nor the ſurfeits which they ſo eagerly incur, when their good fortune ſets a plentiful table in their way. By this path, rough and difficult as I have already deſcribed it, after many tumblings, ſlidings, riſings, and fallings, they at laſt attain to the wiſhed degree, which being gained, we have ſeen many who have paſſed with a favourable gale of fortune, through theſe quickſands and ſtraits of Scylla and Charybdis; I ſay, we have ſeen many ſuch command and dictate to the world, from a chair of ſtate; their hunger being changed into ſatiety, their cold into refreſhment, their rags into gay apparel, and the matts on which they lay, to the richeſt damaſk and fineſt holland: a recompence which their merits moſt juſtly enjoys! but their labours, when fairly ſtated and compared, are infinitely ſhort of the warrior's, as I ſhall now clearly demonſtrate.'

* Alluding to the charity given at the gates of monaſteries.

CHAPTER

CHAPTER XI.

The Sequel of Don Quixote's curious Discourse on the Subjects of Learning and War.

THE knight proceeded thus: 'Since we began with the student, representing his poverty in all its circumstances, let us see if the soldier be more wealthy; and we shall find that poverty itself is not poorer; for he is restricted to his miserable pay, which come always late, if ever, or to what he can plunder by force, with the imminent danger of his life and conscience; and frequently, his nakedness is such, that his slashed buff doublet serves him instead of coat, shirt, and all other parts of apparel. In a winter campaign, while he remains in the open field, he has nothing to mitigate the severity of the cold, but his own breath, which, as it proceeds from en empty place, must, I believe, be cold, contrary to all the rules of nature: but stay still the approach of night, when it is to be hoped his bed will make amends for all these inconveniencies; and this, if it be not his own fault, will never offend in point of narrowness, for he may measure as many feet of ground as he thinks sufficient, and there tumble about at pleasure, without any danger of discomposing the sheets. Then, instead of the day and hour of receiving the degrees of his art, comes the day of battle, in which his head is adorned with the doctoral tossle, made in form of a pledgit, to stuff the wound made by some ball, which perhaps hath gone through his temples, or left him maimed of a leg or arm; and even if this should not happen, but merciful Heaven guard and preserve him safe and sound, he continues as poor as ever; he must risk himself in several more rencounters and battles, and be victorious in each, before his circumstances be bettered; but these miracles rarely happen. Tell me, gentlemen, have you considered what a small proportion those who make their fortunes by war bear to those who perish in the field? Doubtless, you must answer, that there is no sort of comparison; that the

ſlain are ſcarce to be numbered, while the living, who are recompenſed for their ſervices, may be comprehended within three figures of arithmetick*. The caſe of the learned is quite the reverſe†; for, one way or another, they are all provided: ſo that, though the toil of a ſoldier is greater, his reward is much leſs. To this obſervation, it may be replied, that it is far more eaſy to reward two thouſand ſcholars than thirty thouſand ſoldiers; for the firſt are recompenſed with offices, which muſt of courſe be beſtowed on people of their profeſſion; whereas, the others can enjoy no reward, except a ſhare of the property belonging to their maſter whom they ſerve: even this impoſſibility ſtrengthens my aſſeveration.

'But waving that conſideration, which would lead us into a moſt intricate labyrinth, let us return to the pre-eminence which arms have over learning; a point hitherto undecided, of ſuch force are the reaſons alledged on both ſides of the queſtion; one of which, in favour of the laſt, is, that without letters, the profeſſion of arms could not be ſupported, becauſe there are laws to which war itſelf is ſubject; and all laws fall within the province of letters and learned men. To this obſervation, the partizans of the other opinion reply, that no laws could be maintained without arms, which preſerve the conſtitution, defend kingdoms,

* i. e. Do not amount to 1000, which is a number expreſſed by four figures.

† The literal tranſlation is, 'For, from the ſkirts—for I would not mention the ſleeves.' The Spaniards, inſtead of the Engliſh phraſe, 'By Hook or by Crook,' uſe this of 'From the ſleeves, or the ſkirts;' derived from the practice of taylors, who are ſuppoſed to cabbage from thoſe parts of the habit in which there is the greateſt quantity of cloth; but the knight's exception of ſleeves, on this occaſion, ſeems to have proceeded from a ſuppoſition that poor ſcholars are generally provided for in the church, and conſequently wear caſſocks, which deſcend to the heels.

doms, guard cities, ſcour the highways, and clear the ſeas of piratical corſairs. In ſhort, that without arms, all republicks, kingdoms, monarchies, cities, journies by land, and voyages by ſea, would be expoſed to the horror and confuſion that attend unbridled war, while it continues in all its licentious privilege and force. It is a general and eſtabliſhed maxim, that every thing ought to be eſteemed in proportion to what it coſts. Now, to become eminent in letters, coſts the ſtudent much time, watching, hunger, nakedneſs, vertigoes, indigeſtion, and their conſequences, which are in part mentioned above: but, to acquire in a regular manner the character of a good ſoldier, a man muſt undergo all theſe inconveniences in an incomparably greater degree; becauſe he is every moment in danger of loſing his life. What fear of indigence and poverty can ſeize and harraſs the ſtudent's apprehenſion, equal to that which muſt poſſeſs the ſoldier beſieged in a fortreſs, who, being placed centinel or guard in ſome ravelin or cavalier*, perceives the enemy at work undermining the very ſpot whereon he ſtands, without daring to ſtir from his poſt, or avoid the danger by which he is ſo imminently threatened? All he can do, is to give notice of what paſſes to his captain, who muſt endeavour to baffle the foe by ſome countermine, while he remains upon the place in terror and expectation of being ſuddenly whirled aloft into the clouds without wings, and of falling thence headlong into the profound abyſs: if this danger ſeems inconſiderable, let us ſee whether it be equalled or exceeded in the grappling of two gallies, by their prows, in the midſt of the extended ocean; when they are locked and faſtened into each other, and the ſoldier hath not an inch more than two feet of the beak to ſtand upon, while he ſees himſelf threatened and oppoſed by as many miniſters of death as there are cannon in the enemy's veſſel,

* Cavalier is an artificial mount raiſed in a fortreſs for the convenience of ſcouring a field, or oppoſing a commanding work of the enemy.

vessel, and these within a spear's length of his body; and is sensible, that if his feet should chance to slip, he would instantly visit the profound bosom of the sea; yet, nevertheless, with an intrepid heart, incited and transported by honour, he bears the brunt of their whole artillery, and endeavours by that narrow passage to board the adverse vessel: and, what is very much to be admired, is, that as soon as one falls, never to rise again till the general resurrection, another occupies his place, and should he also drop into the sea, which, like an enemy, gapes to devour him, another and another still succeeds, without the smallest intermission: an instance of gallantry and boldness the greatest to be found in all the extremities of war. Happy were the ages past, while strangers to those infernal instruments of artillery, the author of which is, I firmly believe, now in hell, enjoying the reward of his diabolical invention, that puts it in the power of an infamous coward to deprive the most valiant cavalier of life; for, often in the heat of that courage and resolution that fires and animates the gallant breast, there comes a random ball, how or from whence no man can tell, shot off, perhaps, by one that fled, and was afraid at the flash of his own accursed machine, and, in an instant, puts an end to the schemes and existence of a man who deserved to live for ages. This very consideration makes me almost own, that I am sorry for having chosen this profession of a knight-errant in this detestable age; for, though no danger can daunt my resolution, it gives me some uneasiness to think that powder and shot may deprive me of the opportunity of making myself famous and renowned through the whole globe, for the valour of my arm, and the keeness of my sword: but, let the will of Heaven be fulfilled! if I accomplish my aim, I shall be more esteemed, because I have faced more danger than ever was incurred by the knights errant in ages past.'

While the rest of the company were employed in eating, this long harangue was uttered by Don Quixote, who

who never thought of ſwallowing a morſel; though Sancho frequently put him in mind of eating his ſupper, obſerving, that he would afterwards have time enough to ſay what he pleaſed. The hearers were moved with freſh concern, at ſeeing a man who in every other ſubject ſeemed to have a large ſhare of ſenſe and diſcernment, loſe it ſo irrecoverably, whenever the diſcourſe turned upon the curſed miſchievous theme of chivalry. The curate obſerved, that there was a great deal of reaſon in what he had advanced in favour of arms; and that he himſelf, though a graduate, conſequently a man of letters, was entirely of the knight's opinion.

Supper being ended, and the table uncovered, while the landlady, her daughter, and Maritornes, were buſied in fitting up the garret of Don Quixote de La Mancha, in which it was determined the three ladies ſhould paſs the night by themſelves, Don Fernando intreated the captive to recount the ſtory of his life, which he imagined muſt be both uncommon and entertaining, from the ſpecimen they had already ſeen, in his arriving thus equipped, in company with the fair Zorayda. To this requeſt the ſtranger anſwered, that he would willingly obey his command, though he was afraid the company would not find the relation to their liking; but, nevertheleſs, rather than fail in point of obedience, he was ready to make it. The curate and whole company thanked him for his complaiſance, and joined in the requeſt; and he ſeeing himſelf beſought by ſo many, ſaid there was no occaſion for entreaties, where they might ſo effectually command: 'Lend me your attention therefore, and you ſhall hear a true ſtory, perhaps unequalled by thoſe fictions which are uſually adorned with all the curious and profound artifice of compoſition.'

At this preamble, all preſent adjuſted and compoſed themſelves; and he perceiving the general ſilence in which they waited for the performance of his promiſe, began in this manner, with a grave and agreeable voice.

CHAPTER

CHAPTER XII.

In which the Captive recounts his Life and Adventures.

'IN a certain place among the mountains of Leon my family had its origin; more beholden to the liberality of nature than to the ſmiles of fortune: though, amidſt the narrowneſs of circumſtances which prevails in that country, my father had the reputation of being rich, and really was ſo, had he poſſeſſed the art of preſerving, as he practiſed the means of ſpending, his eſtate. This liberal and profuſe diſpoſition was owing to his having been a ſoldier in his youth; the army being a ſchool in which the miſer becomes generous, and the benevolent man grows prodigal; for a covetous ſoldier is a monſter which is rarely ſeen. My father exceeded the bounds of liberality, and bordered upon thoſe of prodigality; a diſpoſition of very little ſervice to a married man who has children to ſucceed him in rank as well as name; and he had no leſs than three; all of them ſons, already at an age to chuſe for themſelves. The old gentleman finding it impoſſible, as he ſaid, to reſiſt the bent of his inclination, was reſolved to deprive himſelf of the means that induced and enabled him to ſpend ſo laviſhly, by giving up his eſtate; as without money Alexander himſelf muſt have ſeemed frugal.

'One day, therefore, calling us all three together into his chamber, he delivered himſelf in theſe or the like words: "Sons, to ſay I love you, is no more than to ſay and know you are my own children; though it would ſeem that I do not love you, by my ſquandering away the fortune which is your due. But that you may be henceforth convinced that I love you like a true parent, rather than ſeek your deſtruction, like a ſtep-father, I am reſolved to execute a plan which I have formed a good while ago, and digeſted with the moſt mature deliberation. You are now of an age to chuſe ſettlements for yourſelves, or at leaſt to pitch upon

upon employments which, in your riper years, may conduce to your honour and advantage. My intention is to divide my eſtate into four equal parts, three of which you ſhall receive among you, in equal ſhares, without the leaſt difference or diſtinction; and the fourth I will reſerve for my own ſuſtenance and ſupport, while Heaven will be pleaſed to protract the days of my life. But after you have received your portions, I ſhould be glad to find you inclined to follow the paths which I ſhall propoſe. We have a ſaying in Spain, which I believe is very true, as indeed all proverbs are, becauſe they are ſhort ſentences dictated by long and ſage experience; that which I mean contains no more than theſe words: "The church, the court, or the ſea:" as if it more fully expreſſed the following advice, "He that would make his fortune, ought either to dedicate his time to the church, go to ſea as a merchant, or attach himſelf to the court;" for it is commonly obſerved that, "The king's crumb is worth the baron's batch." This I mention, becauſe I wiſh and deſire that one of you would follow letters, another merchandize, and a third ſerve his ſovereign in the field, ſince it is difficult to obtain an office at court: and, although much wealth cannot be expected, there is a great deal of valour and reputation to be acquired in war. In eight days I will give each of you his ſhare, in ready-money, without defrauding you of one farthing, as you will ſee by my diſtribution. Tell me, therefore, if you are willing to follow my advice in what I have propoſed?" ſaid my father, addreſſing himſelf to me as the eldeſt. After having diſſuaded him from parting from his eſtate, and deſired him to ſpend as much of it as he pleaſed, obſerving, that we were young men, and capable of making our own fortunes, I concluded with ſaying, I would obey his will, and for my own part, chuſe to ſerve God and my king, in adhering to the exerciſe of arms. My ſecond brother made the ſame offer, propoſing to ſet ſail for the Indies, and employ his ſtock of ready-money in traffic. The youngeſt,

youngest, and I believe the wisest, said he would qualify himself for the church, by going and finishing his studies at Salamanca.

'We having thus agreed in the choice of our different employments, our father embraced us all affectionately, and within the time he had proposed, performed his promise of giving us our portions, which to the best of my remembrance amounted to three thousand ducats each; for an uncle of ours paid ready-money for the whole estate, that it might not be alienated from the family. In one day, all three took leave of our worthy father, when I, thinking it a piece of inhumanity to leave him so straitened in his old age, prevailed upon him to accept two thousand of the three I had received, as the remainder was sufficient to accommodate me with all the necessaries of a soldier. Each of my brothers, induced by my example, gave him back one third of their shares, so that he remained possessed of four thousand ducats in cash, and the value of three thousand more in land, which he did not chuse to sell. At length, I say, we took leave of him, and that uncle whom I have mentioned, not without great concern and many tears on all sides; they charging us to seize every opportunity of making them acquainted with our adventures, either in prosperity or adversity. Having given this promise, and received their embraces and blessing, one took the road to Salamanca, another went to Seville, and I set out for Alicant, where I understood there was a ship taking in a lading of wool for Genoa. Two and twenty years are now elapsed since I left my father's house; and during all that time, though I have written several letters, I never received the least information concerning him or my brothers. What hath happened to myself within that period, I will now briefly relate.

'Embarking at Alicant, I had a favourable passage to Genoa, from whence I went to Milan, where I provided myself with arms and some gay military furniture. Then I departed for Piedmont, with a resolution

of

of inlifting in the fervice; and being upon the road to Alexandria de la Paglia, was informed that the great duke of Alva was on his march into Flanders. Upon receiving this intimation, I changed my defign, attending him to the Low Countries, ferved in all his campaigns, and was prefent at the death of the counts Egmont and Horn. There I obtained an enfign's commiffion in the company of a famous captain of Guadalajara, whofe name was Diego de Urbina: but, after I had been fome time in Flanders, the news arrived of the league between his holinefs Pope Pius the fifth of happy memory, and the Spanifh monarchy, againft their common enemy the Turk, who about that time had, by means of his fleet, made a conqueft of the famous ifland of Cyprus, which was under the dominion of the Venetians; a moft lamentable and unfortunate lofs. It was certainly known that the moft ferene Don John of Auftria, natural brother to our good king Philip, was to be general of this league; and the vaft preparations for this war were publicly reported. All thefe rumours raifed and excited within me the defire and refolution of being prefent in a campaign of fuch expectation; and though I had ftrong hopes, and indeed certain promifes, of being promoted to the rank of a captain as foon as a vacancy fhould happen, I chofe to quit that profpect, and go, as I actually did, to Italy; and luckily for me, Don John of Auftria was then at Genoa, juft going to embark for Naples, in order to join the Venetian fleet, which he afterwards found at Meffina. In fhort, I ferved in that moft happy campaign, and was advanced to the rank of captain of foot, which honourable poft I obtained more by good fortune than merit; and that day which was fo fortunate for Chriftendom, on which the world was convinced of the error they had efpoufed in believing the Turks invincible by fea; on that day, I fay, when the Ottoman pride and infolence were humbled and broke; among fo many happy Chriftians there prefent, (and fure thofe who fell were happier than the living victors!)

victors!) I alone was unfortunate; for, instead of receiving a naval crown, which would have been my reward, had I lived in the Roman ages, on the night that succeeded that glorious day, I found myself a captive loaded with chains! And this was the cause of my misfortune: Uchali, king of Algiers, a bold and fortunate corsair, having attacked and mastered the capitan galley of Malta, in which there remained only three knights alive, and those desperately wounded; the vessel commanded by John Andrea Doria, in which my company was stationed, hastened to her relief, and I doing my duty on that occasion, leaped into the enemy's ship, which disengaging herself immediately from our galley, that was grappled with her, my soldiers were prevented from following their officer, and I found myself alone among my foes, whom, by reason of their numbers, I could not resist; therefore was obliged to submit, after having been almost covered over with wounds; and Uchali, as you have heard, gentlemen, having saved himself with his whole squadron, I remained his prisoner, the only sad person amidst the general joy, and captive among so many that were set free; for full fifteen thousand Christians, who came into the action chained to the Turkish oars, that day recovered their long wished for liberty.

'I was carried to Constantinople, where Selim, the grand Turk, created my master general of the sea, for having done his duty in the battle; and as a proof of his valour brought off the high standard of Malta. Next year, which was that of seventy-two, I rowed in the capitan galley of the Three Lanthorns, at Navarino, where I saw and observed the Christians lose the opportunity of taking the whole Turkish fleet in the harbour; for, all the Levantines and Janissaries belonging to it laid their account with being attacked in port, and had actually got in readiness their knapsacks and passamaques, (which are a kind of shoes,) in order to go on shore, and seek their safety in flight, without waiting for the assault; such was the conster-

nation

nation that prevailed among them! But Heaven ordained things to happen in another manner; not thro' any error or neglect of the general who commanded the expedition, but on account of the sins of Christendom; it being the will and permission of God, that we should never want executioners to chastise us. In short, Uchali retreated to Modon, which is an island almost contiguous to Navarino, where he disembarked his men, fortified the mouth of the harbour, and remained until Don John set sail on his return. In this expedition, the galley called the Prize, commanded by a son of the famous corsair Barbarossa, was taken by the capitan galley of Naples called the She-wolf, the commander of which was that thunderbolt of war, that father of his soldiers, that fortunate and invincible chief, Don Alvaro de Basan, marquis of Santa Cruz: and I cannot help mentioning what happened at the taking of this prize. The son of Barbarossa was so cruel, and treated his captives so inhumanly, that when the rowers perceived the She-wolf ready to board, and in a fair way of taking her, they quitted their oars all at once, and seizing the captain, who stood upon the strentrel*, calling to them to row lustily, they tossed him forwards from bench to bench, and bit him so severely as he went along, that before he passed the main-mast, his soul passed into hell. Such was his barbarity, as I have already observed, and such the revenge which their hatred to him inspired!

'We returned to Constantinople; and during the following year, which was seventy-three, understood that Don John had taken Tunis, wrested that whole kingdom from the Turks, and put Muley Hamet in possession of the whole; thus cutting off all the hopes of a restoration from Muley Hamida, the most valiant and most cruel Moor of his time. The grand Signior was deeply affected with his loss, and practising that sagacity which is peculiar to all those of his family, clapped

 up

* The strentrel, or estanterol, is a post that supports the awning of the poop.

up a peace with the Venetians, who were much more desirous of it than he. Next year, being seventy-four, he attacked the goleta and fort, which Don John had left half-finished, near Tunis: and on all these occasions I was present, being tied to the oar, without the least hope of freedom, especially by ransom; for I was resolved not to write to my father an account of my misfortune. At length, the goleta and fort were both lost, having been besieged by seventy-five thousand Turkish soldiers, regularly paid, and upwards of four hundred thousand Moors and Arabs from the other parts of Africa; this multitude being provided with a vast quantity of warlike stores and ammunition, and attended with such a number of pioneers, that, by throwing handfuls of earth, they might have covered both the places they came to besiege. The goleta, which had been counted impregnable, was first taken; not through any fault of the besieged, who performed all that men could do in its defence, but because experience shewed that trenches could be made with ease in that loose sand, under which, though water was commonly found at the depth of two spans, the Turks, at that time, dug as many fathoms, without finding one drop; and so filling a vast number of sacks, raised their works so high as to overlook the fort; then mounting this cavalier with cannon, kept such a firing as rendered it impossible for the garrison to make any longer defence. It was a common opinion, that our troops ought not to have shut themselves up in the goleta, but opposed the disembarkation in the plain; however, those who talk in that manner, speak at random, and must be persons of small experience in such affairs; for, if the whole garrison in both places scarce amounted to seven thousand soldiers, how could such a small number, though ever so valiant, take the field, and at the same time defend the forts, against such a multitude of foes? And how could the forts be possibly maintained without supplies, in an enemy's country, when they were hemmed in by such a numerous and obstinate

ſtinate army? But others thought, and I am of the ſame opinion, that Heaven manifeſted a particular grace and favour to Spain, in permitting them to deſtroy that rendezvous and pretence of miſchief, that ſink, ſpunge, and devourer of infinite ſums of money, which were there unprofitably ſpent, without ſerving any other purpoſe than that of preſerving the memory of its being the moſt happy conqueſt of the invincible Charles the Fifth: as if it was neceſſary for thoſe ſtones to ſupport his fame, which is already immortal. The fort was alſo yielded, though the Turks won it by inches; for the garriſon behaved with ſuch gallantry and reſolution, that in two and twenty general aſſaults, the enemy loſt upwards of twenty-five thouſand men; and of the three hundred Spaniſh ſoldiers that remained alive, they did not make one priſoner who had not been wounded during the ſiege: a clear and certain proof of the obſtinate valour with which the places were defended. A ſmall fort, or tower, that ſtood in the middle of the lake, under the command of Don Juan Zanoguera, a Valentian knight, and celebrated ſoldier, ſurrendered upon terms: but Don Pedro Puertocarrero, general of the goleta, was made priſoner; and though he did all that man could do in defence of the place, he was ſo deeply affected by the loſs of it, that he died of grief on the road to Conſtantinople, whither they were carrying him captive. The general of the fort, whoſe name was Gabrio Cerbellon, a Milaneſe gentleman, a great engineer, and excellent ſoldier, was likewiſe taken priſoner; and in theſe two forts periſhed many perſons of note, among whom was one Pagan d'Oria, a knight of St. John, a gentleman of a moſt generous diſpoſition, as appeared from his exceſſive liberality to his brother, the famous Juan Andrea d'Oria; and what made his death ſtill more lamentable, was, that he periſhed by the hands of ſome Arabs, to whom, ſeeing the fort already loſt, he truſted himſelf, relying upon their promiſe to carry him, diſguiſed in a Mooriſh dreſs, to Tabarca, which is a ſmall

port or ſettlement belonging to the Genoeſe, who fiſh for coral on that part of the coaſt; but thoſe perfidious Arabs cut off his head, which they carried to the general of the Turkiſh navy, who fulfilled upon them our Caſtilian proverb, which imports, that though we love the treaſon, we abhor the traitor; for it was reported, that he ordered them all to be hanged, becauſe they had not brought him alive.

'Among the Chriſtians who were taken in the fort, was one Don Pedro de Aguilar, a native of ſome town in Andaluſia, who had been an enſign in the garriſon, a ſoldier of great worth and rare endowments, particularly bleſſed with a happy talent for poetry. This circumſtance I mention, becauſe it was his fate to belong to our galley, where he was my companion at the oar, and fellow-ſlave; and before we departed from that harbour, he compoſed two ſongs, by way of epitaph, upon the goleta and the fort. As I have them both by heart, I believe it will not be diſagreeable to the company if I repeat them.'

When the captive mentioned Don Pedro de Aguilar, Don Fernando looked at his companions, who ſmiled; and when the ſtranger was going to repeat the ſongs, one of the three ſaid to him, 'Before you proceed, I beg the favour to know what became of that Don Pedro de Aguilar?' 'All that I know of the matter,' replied the captive, 'is, that after having ſtaid two years at Conſtantinople, he made off in the habit of an arnaut*, with a Greek ſpy: but I do not know whether or not he obtained his liberty, though I believe he ſucceeded; for about a year after, I ſaw the ſame Greek at Conſtantinople; but I had not an opportunity to enquire about the ſucceſs of their ſcheme.' 'Then I can ſatisfy you in that particular,' reſumed the cavalier: 'Don Pedro is my brother, and now lives at home, in good health and eaſy circumſtances, bleſſed with a wife and three hopeful ſons.'—'Thanks be to God for the great mercies beſtowed upon him!' anſwered

* A Dalmatian trooper.

ſwered the captive; ‘ for, in my opinion, there is no happineſs on earth equal to that of liberty regained.’ ‘ Beſides,’ ſaid the gentleman, ‘ I retain in my memory the ſongs which my brother compoſed.’ ‘ Be ſo good, then,’ replied the ſtranger, ‘ as to entertain the company with them; for, doubtleſs, you can repeat them more perfectly than I can.’ ‘ With all my heart,’ ſaid the cavalier: ‘ that upon the goleta runs thus.’

CHAPTER XIII.

The Continuation of the Captive's Hiſtory.

I.

“ Ye happy ſhades, whoſe deeds renown'd
“ Have freed you from encumb'ring clay;
“ From this low ſcene, where woes abound,
“ Aſcending to eternal day.

II.

“ With glorious zeal your boſoms glow'd,
“ Your bodies brav'd exceſſive toil:
“ Your blood with that of Pagans flow'd,
“ To drench the hoſtile, barren ſoil.

III.

“ Your lives, but not your courage, fail'd;
“ Death ſeal'd your juſt, victorious claim;
“ Enjoy, ſtill honour'd and bewail'd,
“ Immortal happineſs and fame.”

‘ Theſe are the very words which I remember,’ ſaid the captive. ‘ And, if my memory does not fail me,’ replied the gentleman, ‘ the other upon the fort is this.

I.

“ Lo! from yon ruins on the deſart plain,
“ Oppreſs'd with numbers, in th' unequal fight,
“ Three thouſand ſouls of Chriſtian warriors ſlain,
“ To happier regions wing'd their joyous flight.

II.

“ Yet not before in vain they had eſſay'd
“ The force and vigour of their dauntleſs arms;
“ Till wearied and reduc'd, though undiſmay'd,
“ They welcom'd death, encompaſs'd with alarms.

III.

" On Afric's coaſt, as records tell,
" The ſcene of paſt and preſent woes,
" More valiant bodies never fell,
" More ſpotleſs ſpirits never roſe."

The ſongs were not diſliked; and the captive, rejoicing at the good fortune of his comrade, proceeded thus in his narration.

'The goleta and forts being taken, the Turks ordered the firſt to be diſmantled, the other being quite demoliſhed before it was ſurrendered; and that this might be done with the leſs trouble, and greater diſpatch, it was undermined in three parts; but they could by no means blow up the old walls, which ſeemed to be the weakeſt part, while that which was executed by Fratin, was deſtroyed with great facility. In ſhort, the victorious fleet returned in triumph to Conſtantinople, where, in a few months, happened the death of my maſter Uchali, who went by the name of Uchali Fartax, which, in the language of that country, ſignifies the Scabby Renegado; for ſuch he actually was; and it is a cuſtom among the Turks, to beſtow epithets upon people, derived either from ſome defect or virtue inherent in them: this method they practiſe, becauſe they have but four families diſtinguiſhed by particular names, and theſe are deſcended from the houſe of Ottoman; ſo that the reſt, as I have obſerved, adopt ſome appellation, either from the blemiſhes of the body, or the virtues of the mind. This leper, therefore, tugged at the oar, during fourteen years, as ſlave to the Grand Signior; and when he was turned of thirty-four, apoſtatized, out of reſentment againſt a Turk, who ſtruck him at the oar; renouncing his religion, that he might be able to revenge the affront. Such was his gallantry and conduct, that, without practiſing thoſe vile ſteps and methods by which the ſultan's favourites are raiſed, he was promoted to the throne of Algiers, and afterwards

wards created general at ſea, which is the third poſt in the empire. He was a native of Calabria, a man of good morals, and behaved with great humanity to his ſlaves, who, to the number of three thouſand, were, at his death, in conſequence of his laſt will, divided between his renegadoes and the Grand Signior, who is alſo co-heir with the children of all his deceaſed ſubjects. I fell to the ſhare of a Venetian, who had been a common ſailor when he was taken; and Uchali had ſuch an affection for him, that he enjoyed the greateſt ſhare of his favour, and became the moſt cruel renegado that ever was known. This man, whoſe name was Azanaga, acquired great riches, and even ſucceeded to the crown of Algiers, to which place I accompanied him from Conſtantinople, with ſome degree of ſatisfaction, at the thoughts of being ſo near my own country; not that I intended to ſend home an account of my unhappy fate, but to ſee if fortune would not prove more favourable at Algiers than at Conſtantinople, where I had laid a thouſand ſchemes for my eſcape, without having an opportunity of putting one of them in execution; but I was in hope of finding at Algiers ſome other more effectual means of obtaining that which I ſo ardently deſired: for the hope of gaining my liberty never forſook my breaſt; on the contrary, when all my pains, efforts, and expectations, miſcarried, far from abandoning myſelf to deſpair, I endeavoured to find out ſome new expedient, which, though ever ſo frail and unſubſtantial, ſerved to ſupport my ſpirits, and flatter my imagination. Thus I made ſhift to live within a houſe or priſon, called a bath, in which the Turks confine the Chriſtian captives, whether belonging to the king, or private perſons, or of that claſs which they call magazine-ſlaves: theſe are the captives of the council, who ſerve the ſtate in public works, and other kinds of day-labour; and find great difficulty in obtaining their freedom, becauſe they belong to the community, and have no particular maſter with whom

they

they can treat concerning their ranſom, even though they can command money for the purpoſe.

'In theſe baths, as I have already ſaid, ſome private perſons lodge their ſlaves, eſpecially when their ranſom is agreed upon; and there they remain ſecure, and at their eaſe, until it arrives. Neither do the king's captives, who are to be ranſomed, go out to work with the reſt of the crew, except when the money is delayed; and then, that they may be induced to write with more importunity, they are ſent out with the reſt to cut wood, an office of no ſmall mortification and toil. As they knew I had been a captain, I in vain aſſured them, that I had neither intereſt nor money; they put me into the number of thoſe who were to be ranſomed, loading me with a chain, rather to denote my condition than to ſecure my perſon; ſo that I ſpent my time in that bath, among a great many cavaliers and people of faſhion, who were thus marked and deſigned for ranſom; and though we were ſometimes, nay, almoſt always, expoſed to hunger and nakedneſs, nothing gave us ſo much pain, as to hear and ſee, upon every occaſion, the new and unheard-of cruelties which my maſter exerciſed upon the Chriſtians. He was every day hanging one, impaling another, maiming a third, upon ſuch ſlight occaſions, frequently without any cauſe aſſigned, that the Turks themſelves owned he acted thus out of mere wontonneſs or barbarity, as being naturally of a ſavage diſpoſition, and an inveterate enemy to the whole human race. The perſon who uſed the greateſt freedom with him was a Spaniſh ſoldier, called ſuch-a-one de Saavedra; who, though he did many things which thoſe people will not ſoon forget, in attempting to regain his liberty, he never gave him one blow, nor ordered him once to be chaſtiſed, nor even chid him with one haſty word; and yet the leaſt of all his pranks was ſufficient, as we thought, to bring him to the ſtake: nay, he himſelf was more than once afraid of being impaled alive. If time would permit, I could here recount ſome of that ſoldier's actions, which

which, perhaps, might entertain and ſurpriſe you more than the relation of my own ſtory.

'But to return to the thread of my narration: juſt over the yard of our priſon were the windows of a rich and principal Moor; but, according to the cuſtom of the country, they were rather like peep-holes than windows, and even theſe covered with very thick and cloſe lattices. One day I chanced to be on the terrace of our gaol, with three of my companions, paſſing the time in trying which of us could leap fartheſt in our ſhackles, the reſt of the Chriſtians being gone out to work: I caſually lifted up my eyes, and perceived a cane with a handkerchief tied to it, held out at one of thoſe little openings I have mentioned, and waving to and fro, as if by way of ſignal for ſome of us to go and catch it. This object was no ſooner obſerved, than one of my companions ran haſtily to the place that was directly under it, to ſee if the cane would be dropped, or what would be the conſequence; but when he arrived, it was pulled up, and moved from one ſide to another, as if a man ſhould ſignify his diſſent from any propoſal, by ſhaking his head: when the Chriſtian returned, the cane was lowered again, with the ſame motion as at firſt, upon which another of our company tried the experiment, but ſucceeded no better than the firſt: a third went, and miſcarried like the other two. Obſerving their diſappointment, I was reſolved to try my fortune alſo: accordingly, I had no ſooner placed myſelf under the cane than it was dropped, and fell down within the bath, juſt at my feet. I ſnatched it up immediately, and untied the handkerchief, in which I found a knot containing ten zianiys, which are pieces of bad gold, current among the Moors, each of them valued at ten rials of our money. It would be ſuperfluous to ſay that I rejoiced at this windfall: indeed, my joy was equal to my ſurpriſe; for I could not conceive from whence that preſent could come, eſpecially to me; the circumſtance of the cane's being refuſed to every other perſon plainly ſhewing that the favour was intended

intended for me. I pocketed this lucky ſum, broke the cane, returned to the terrace, and looked at the window, through which appeared a very white hand, that opened the lattice, and haſtily ſhut it again: from this circumſtance we underſtood, or at leaſt imagined, that we owed the preſent to ſome lady who lived in that houſe; and, in token of thanks, made our obeiſance in the Mooriſh manner, by bowing the head, bending the body, and croſſing the hands upon the breaſt. Soon after this ceremony, a ſmall croſs, made of cane, was held out at the window, and immediately withdrawn; a ſignal which confirmed us in the opinion that we were befriended by ſome Chriſtian woman, who lived as a ſlave in that houſe: but this ſuppoſition was changed, when we reflected upon the whiteneſs of the hand, and the bracelets which we had perceived; and then we concluded that ſhe muſt be one of thoſe Chriſtian renegades whom their maſters frequently take to wife; and even think themſelves fortunate in having ſuch an opportunity; for they eſteem them much more than the women of their own nation. But all our conjectures were wide of the truth.

'From this day forward, our whole entertainment was to gaze at the window, as the north in which the ſtar of the cane had appeared; but full fifteen days elapſed, before we had another glimpſe either of that or the hand, or indeed of any other ſignal; and during this interval, though we endeavoured, by all the means in our power, to learn who lived in that houſe, and whether or not there was a Chriſtian renegado in it, we never could get any other information, but that it belonged to a rich Moor of great note, called Agimorato, who had been alcaide of Pata, an office of great honour among that people; but, when we leaſt expected another ſhower of zianiys, the cane reappeared all of a ſudden, with another handkerchief, and a larger knot than before; and this occurrence happened as formerly, when none but ourſelves were in the bath: we made the uſual experiment, each of my three companions going

going towards it as at firſt without ſucceſs, until I approached, and then it was immediately dropped. I untied the knot, within which I found forty crowns in Spaniſh gold, and a paper written in Arabian characters, with a large croſs at the head of the page. I kiſſed the ſacred ſign, put up the money, returned to the terrace, where we made our obeiſance: the hand appearing again, I made ſigns that I ſhould read the letter, and then the window was ſhut. We were equally pleaſed and perplexed at this event, for none of us underſtood Arabick; and although our impatience to know the contents of the paper was very great, the difficulty of finding an interpreter was ſtill greater. At length I determined to truſt a renegade, a native of Murcia, who had profeſſed himſelf my friend, and given me ſuch pledges of his fidelity, as obliged him to keep any ſecret I ſhould think proper to impart: for thoſe renegades who intend to teturn to Chriſtendom, uſually carry about with them certificates ſigned by the principal captives, atteſting, in the moſt ample form they can deviſe, that ſuch a renegade is an honeſt man, who hath always been obliging to the Chriſtians, and is deſirous of making his eſcape with the firſt opportunity. Some there are who procure theſe teſtimonials with a good intention; others uſe them occaſionally, as the inſtruments of their craft; for, going to rob and plunder on the Chriſtian coaſts, if they ſhould chance to be ſhipwrecked or taken, they produce their certificates, and obſerve that theſe papers will ſhew the real deſign of their coming on a cruize with Turks, which was no other than to take the firſt occaſion of returning to their native country; by theſe means they eſcape the firſt fury of reſentment, and are reconciled to the church, without ſuffering the leaſt damage; but when they ſee their opportunity, they return to Barbary, and re-aſſume their former way of life; whereas thoſe who procure recommendations with a good deſign, make uſe of them accordingly, and remain in peace among the Chriſtians. Such a renegado was this friend,

friend, who had obtained certificates from all my companions, conceived in the ſtrongeſt terms of confidence and applauſe; for which, had he been detected, the Moors would have burned him alive. I knew that he could both ſpeak and write the Arabian tongue; but, before I would diſcloſe the whole affair, I deſired him to read that paper, which I had found by chance in a corner of my cabbin. He opened it accordingly, and having pored and peruſed it a good while, muttering between his teeth, I aſked if he underſtood the contents. He anſwered in the affirmative, bidding me, if I choſe to have the literal meaning, furniſh him with pen and ink, that he might tranſlate it the more exactly. I accordingly accommodated him with what he deſired; and when he had made an end of the tranſlation at his own leiſure, he ſaid, "This that I have written in Spaniſh is the literal meaning of that Mooriſh paper; and you are to take notice, that whereſoever you meet with the words Lela Marien, they ſignify our Lady the Bleſſed Virgin."

'The paper contained theſe words—"When I was a child, my father had a woman ſlave, who in my own language taught me the Chriſtian worſhip, and told me divers things of Lela Marien. This Chriſtian died, and I am ſure her ſoul did not go to the fire, but to Ala; for I ſaw her twice after her death, and ſhe adviſed me to go to the land of the Chriſtians, where I ſhould ſee Lela Marien, by whom I was beloved. I know not which way to go; many Chriſtians I have ſeen from this window, but not one who ſeems ſo much a gentleman as yourſelf. I am very beautiful and young, and have a great deal of money in my poſſeſſion. If thou canſt find out any method of carrying me to thy country, thou ſhalt there be my huſband, if thou art ſo inclined; but, if that be contrary to thy inclination, I ſhall not be uneaſy, for Lela Marien will provide me with a ſpouſe. I write this with my own hand; let nobody read it, but ſuch as you can truſt. Beware of the Moors, for they are altogether

I deceitful;

decitful; therefore I am very much concerned, for I would not have it diſcloſed to any perſon whatever; becauſe, if it ſhould come to my father's ears, he would inſtantly cauſe me to be ſunk in a well, and covered with ſtones. I will faſten a thread to the cane, to which thou mayeſt tie thine anſwer; and if thou haſt not a proper perſon to write for thee in Arabick, let me know by ſigns; for Lela Marien will help me to underſtand them. May ſhe and Ala preſerve thee, by means of this croſs, which I often kiſs, according to the direction of my deceaſed ſlave!"

'You may eaſily conceive, gentlemen, whether or not we were ſurprized and rejoiced at the contents of this paper. Indeed, the ſymptoms of joy and admiration appeared ſo plain in our behaviour, that the renegado ſuſpected it was not found by accident, but actually written and addreſſed to one of our company. He accordingly intreated us to tell him if his conjecture was true, proteſting that we might ſafely truſt to his fidelity, and aſſuring us, if we would favour him with our confidence, he would venture his life in procuring our freedom. So ſaying, he pulled from his boſom a crucifix of metal, and, with many tears, ſwore by the God repreſented under the form of that image, in whom he, though a wretched ſinner, fully and faithfully believed, that he would be truſty and ſecret in every thing we ſhould pleaſe to communicate; for he firmly believed, and as it were prognoſticated, that by means of her who had written the paper, we ſhould all obtain liberty, and he accompliſh that which he had ſo much at heart, namely, his re-admiſſion into the boſom of his holy mother church, from which he, through his ignorance and guilt, had been, like a rotten member, divided and cut off. This declaration he made with ſo many tears and ſigns of repentance, that we unanimouſly agreed to intruſt him with the affair, and accordingly gave him an account of every thing that had happened, without ſuppreſſing one circumſtance; and ſhewed him the window at which the

cane appeared: ſo that from thence he had took his mark of the houſe, reſolving to inform himſelf, with great care and caution, of the name and quality of thoſe who lived in it. Meanwhile, we were all of opinion, that there was a neceſſity for anſwering the billet; and there being a perſon preſent, who could perform that office, the renegado that inſtant wrote in Arabick what I dictated, which was literally as I ſhall now repeat; for, of all the material circumſtances of that affair, not one hath eſcaped my memory, which will retain them all to my laſt breath. In ſhort, this was the anſwer which I ſent to the beautiful Moor.

" *My dear Lady!*

" Mayeſt thou be protected by the true Ala, and that bleſſed Mary the real mother of God, who, becauſe ſhe loves thee, hath put it into thy heart to go to the land of Chriſtians: beſeech her, therefore, that ſhe will be pleaſed to teach thee how thou mayeſt obey her commands; for ſhe is ſo benevolent that ſhe will grant thy requeſt. For my own part, and in behalf of thoſe who are my fellow priſoners, I promiſe to ſerve thee with our whole power, even unto death. Fail not to write and give me notice of what thou ſhalt reſolve to do; and I will always anſwer thy letters; for the great Ala hath favoured us with the friendſhip of a Chriſtian captive, who can ſpeak and write thy language, as thou wilt perceive by this paper; wherefore thou mayeſt communicate thy will and pleaſure to us without fear. As to thy offer of becoming my wife, when thou ſhalt be ſafely ſettled in the land of the Chriſtians, I pledge myſelf thine, on the faith of a good Chriſtian; and know, that thoſe of our religion perform their promiſes more punctually than the Moors. God, and his mother Mary, take my dear lady into their holy protection!"

' This letter being written and ſealed, I waited two days until the bath was empty, and then went to the uſual place on the terrace, to look for the cane, which in a little time appeared. I no ſooner perceived the ſign,

ſign, though I could not ſee who made it, than I held up the letter, to make her underſtand that ſhe ſhould faſten a thread to the cane; but that was already done, and I tied the paper to it accordingly. In a little time our ſtar appeared again, loaded with the white flag of peace; which being dropped, I took it up, and found, in different coins of gold and ſilver, to the amount of fifty crowns, which increaſed our ſatisfaction fifty-fold, and confirmed us in the hope of obtaining our freedom. That ſame night our renegade returned, and told us, he was informed the houſe was inhabited by the ſame Moor I have mentioned under the name of Agimorato, who was exceſſively rich, and had only one daughter to inherit his whole fortune; that, by the current report in the city, ſhe was the moſt beautiful woman in Barbary; and that many of the viceroys who went thither, had demanded her in marriage, but ſhe would never yield her conſent: he likewiſe underſtood that ſhe had once a Chriſtian ſlave, who had died ſome time ago; ſo that all theſe circumſtances agreed with the contents of her letter. We then conſulted with the renegade about the means of tranſporting ourſelves with the Mooriſh lady into Chriſtendom; and, at length, we came to the reſolution of waiting for another intimation from Zorayda, which is the name of her who now deſires to be called Maria; for we plainly perceived, that by means of her, and no other, we ſhould be enabled to ſurmount all the difficulties that occurred.

'Having come to this determination, the renegado bid us give ourſelves no uneaſineſs, for he would either procure our liberty or forfeit his own life. The bath being full of people during four days, no cane appeared all that time; at the end of which the uſual ſolitude prevailing, we perceived it with a handkerchief ſo pregnant as to promiſe a moſt happy birth. I ſtood under it; the whole was dropped as uſual, and I found in the handkerchief another paper with one hundred crowns in gold, without any mixture of

other coin. The renegade being then preſent, we carried him to our cabbin, where we deſired him to read the letter, which he interpreted in theſe words.

"I know not, dear Sir, how to give directions about our paſſage into Spain; nor hath Lela Marien told me, though I have earneſtly implored her aſſiſtance. But what may be eaſily effected is this: I will from this window furniſh you with a great quantity of money; ſo that you may ranſom yourſelf and your companions; and going to the land of the Chriſtians, purchaſe a bark, with which you may return for the reſt; and you will find me in my father's garden, which is by the gate of Barbazon, cloſe to the ſea-ſide. There I ſhall be during the whole ſummer, with my father and ſervants; and from thence you may, in the night, carry me to the bark without fear. But remember thou ſhalt be my huſband; otherwiſe I will pray to Marien to chaſtiſe thee. If thou canſt depend upon no other perſon for purchaſing the bark, ranſom thyſelf for that purpoſe. I know thou wilt be more apt than any other body to return, becauſe thou art a gentleman and a Chriſtian. Be ſure to inform thyſelf well about the garden. When I ſee thee walking where thou art at preſent, I ſhall know the bath is empty, and provide thee with more money. Ala preſerve thee, my dear gentleman!"

'These were the contents and purport of the ſecond paper; which being read in preſence of us all, each propoſed himſelf as the perſon to be ranſomed, promiſing to go and return with the utmoſt punctuality. I likewiſe offered myſelf for that purpoſe. But the renegado oppoſed the propoſal; ſaying, that he could by no means conſent that one ſhould be ſet free, before we had all obtained our liberty; becauſe experience had taught him, how ill thoſe who are free perform the promiſes they have made in their captivity; for priſoners of note had often practiſed the expedient of ranſoming one of their number, to go to Valencia or Majorca, with money to purchaſe an armed bark,

and

and return for his companions, but they never ſaw his face again; for having once obtained his own liberty, the dread of loſing it again, by returning, blots all manner of obligations out of his remembrance. As a confirmation of the truth of what he alledged, he briefly recounted a caſe which had lately happened to ſome Chriſtian gentlemen, attended with the ſtrangeſt circumſtances ever known even in theſe parts, where the moſt uncommon and ſurprizing events occur almoſt every day. In ſhort, he told us, the moſt practicable and prudent ſcheme was, to give him the money we ſhould receive for our ranſom, with which he would purchaſe a bark at Algiers, under pretence of becoming merchant, and trading to Tetuan, and the other places on that coaſt; and that, being maſter of the veſſel, he would ſoon contrive the means of diſengaging us from the bath, and getting us all on board; eſpecially if the Mooriſh lady ſhould perform her promiſe in ſupplying us with money ſufficient to pay the ranſom of our whole company; in which caſe, being no longer ſlaves, we might embark with the greateſt eaſe and ſafety, even at noon-day. The greateſt difficulty that occurred, was the backwardneſs of the Moors to allow a renegade to purchaſe or command a veſſel, unleſs it be a large cruizer for pirating; becauſe they ſuſpect, eſpecially if he be a Spaniard, that his ſole motive, in buying a ſmall bark, is to make his eſcape into Chriſtendom; but he undertook to remedy that inconvenience, by giving a ſhare of the bark, and profits of the merchandize, to a Tagarin Moor; by which means he ſhould be maſter of the bark, and of conſequence have it in his power to accompliſh the whole affair.

'Although, in the opinion of me and my companions, there was no better plan than that of ſending to Majorca for a bark, as the Mooriſh lady had propoſed, we durſt not contradict the ſentiments of the renegade, leſt he, being diſobliged by our acting contrary to his intention, ſhould make a diſcovery of our correſpondence

dence with the fair Moor, and endanger not only our lives, but alſo that of Zorayda, for which we would have willingly ſacrificed our own. We therefore determined to rely upon God and the renegado; and immediately wrote an anſwer to Zorayda, importing, that we would adhere in every thing to her advice, which was as prudent as if it had been dictated by Lela Marien; and that it depended ſolely upon her, either to haſten or retard the negociation; pledging my faith anew to become her ſpouſe. In conſequence of this intimation, the very very next day, when the bath happened to be empty, ſhe, at different times, by means of the cane and handkerchief, tranſmitted two thouſand crowns in gold, with a paper ſignifying, that on the firſt Jama, which is Friday, ſhe ſhould ſet out for her father's garden; but, before her departure, ſupply us with more money; and deſired us to inform her, if we ſhould find that inſufficient; for ſhe would give us as much as we could deſire, her father having ſuch vaſt ſums, that he would never be ſenſible of what ſhe took, eſpecially as all his keys were in her poſſeſſion. We immediately accommodated the renegado with five hundred crowns, for the purchaſe of the bark; with eight hundred more I ranſomed myſelf, depoſiting the money with a Valentian merchant then reſiding at Algiers, who bargained for my ranſom with the king, and obtained my freedom, upon giving his word to pay the money on the arrival of the firſt ſhip from Valencia; for, if he had paid it immediately, the king would have ſuſpected that the ranſom had been ſome time at Algiers, and that the merchant had hitherto detained it for his own convenience. In ſhort, my maſter was ſo contentious, that I durſt by no means diſburſe the money at once. On the Thurſday before the fair Zorayda removed to her father's country-houſe, ſhe gave us another thouſand crowns, and apprized us of her departure; intreating me, as ſoon as I ſhould be ranſomed, to make myſelf acquainted with her father's garden, and find ſome opportunity of going

thither to see her. I answered, in few words, that I would obey her in every thing; desiring she would fervently recommend us to Lela Marien in all those prayers which she had learned of the slave.

'This affair being transacted, means were concerted for ransoming my three companions; lest, seeing me at liberty, and themselves confined, since I had money enough to procure their freedom, they should be chagrined, and tempted by the devil to do something to the prejudice of Zorayda; for, although their honour and integrity might have secured me against any such apprehension, I would not run the smallest risk, and therefore took care they should be ransomed by the same channel through which my liberty was obtained; depositing the whole sum required in the merchant's hands, that he might with more certainty and confidence act the part of their bondsman; though we never disclosed to him our secret commerce with Zorayda, for fear of what might happen.'

END OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

MAHAL ... JORE